### The Revolution Of The Stars

**Posted originally on the Archive of Our Own at** [http://archiveofourown.org/works/22972477](http://archiveofourown.org/works/22972477).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Rating</th>
<th>Explicit</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Archive Warning</td>
<td>Choose Not To Use Archive Warnings</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Category</td>
<td>F/M</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fandom</td>
<td>ジョジョの奇妙な冒険</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Character</td>
<td>Kujo Jotaro, Kakyoin Noriaki, Joseph Joestar, Caesar Anthonio Zeppeli, Jonathan Joestar, Dio Brando, Kujo Holly, Kujo Sadao, Erina Pendleton Joestar, Elizabeth Joestar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Series</td>
<td>Part 3 of The Legacy Of The Blood</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stats</td>
<td>Published: 2020-03-20 Updated: 2020-07-03 Chapters: 12/42 Words: 94504</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

**The Revolution Of The Stars**

by **softtennie**

**Summary**
“W-Why…?” she rasped out as she looked at the retreating boy, getting him to stop and look back at her from above his shoulder, making her close her eyes for a brief second before looking back to lock eyes with him.

“Why?” she asked him more firmly, more confident in her words “Why did you risk your life to save me?”

Jotaro stayed quiet for a while and only kept his blue-teal eyes staring into her amethyst ones, showing no emotion on his eyes nor his face, but making her feel as if he was communicating something to her, something she couldn’t comprehend quiet yet.

“I don’t know” he simply said as he turned back and started walking outside the room “To be honest… I’m not very sure myself…”

Feeling overwhelm by his boldness in admitting he had saved her but didn’t know why caused some tears to form in Noriko’s eyes as she looked down at her lap, shielding her eyes from the other three in the room with her red bangs, almost in the verge of crying.

“Thank you, Jotaro…”

-----

♡

; or in which I rewrite the whole part of Stardust Crusaders with a fem!Kakyoin, ruining and tearing apart the whole universe Araki has built to fit my own Jojo’s universe.
The Man Possessed By An Evil Spirit

Chapter Summary

The foes from the past are mean to return no matter how hard you try to escape them...

Chapter Notes

♡ Before reading ♡

Hello and welcome, my old and new readers (⁄⁄ ᴗ 疴⁄⁄)

after another hell of a week, we are here, reunited and together, to celebrate the official start of the third part of "The Legacy of The Blood" series and this time our main couple, Jotaro Kujo and Kakyoin Noriko are ready to take over the head of the romance and tragedy Joseph Joestar and Caesia Anthonia Joestar-Zeppeli gave them ♡

also, two people that were really important are mean to comeback and those are... Johanna Joestar and Dio Brando, whose tragedy and dark romance is far from being over... (`.` - `•`)

now, before going to the exciting part, I have to make some clarifications:

– this fic is the third part of the series I have been writing since 2019, having major spoilers from the previous parts so I advice you to go read "We could have been beautiful" and "From USA to Italy with love" so you can get a better understanding of the story and plot I have been taking.

– if you came for this part well, here are some basic info you will need:

★ Johanna Joestar is the genderbend counterpart of Jonathan Joestar who was meant to marry Dio Brando but, for all the events in Phantom Blood, they didn't make it to the altar but Dio left Johanna with a little gift before everything went to hell... George II Joestar.

★ Yes, Dio fathered George II Joestar, which makes every single descendant of Johanna automatically his too...

★ Erin Pendleton is the genderbend counterpart of Erina Pendleton, who married Johanna before Dio took over and raised George (who was born earlier for the trama's sake) and did the same with Joseph.

★ All the things that happened in Battle Tendency did happen but with a genderbend version of Caesar Anthonio Zeppeli taking the lead and whose name is Caesia Anthonia Zeppeli.

★ Joseph does know that Dio is his grandfather but prefers both Erin and Speedwagon as such, using the honorific with both of them.
Caesia did survive and married Joseph, creating three beautiful children, Holly, Julius and Harry Joestar, who are ready to take over in here to make some admens.

Kakyoin Noriko ia the genderbend counterpart of Kakyoin Noriaki who is ready to fill the role of our cherry boy and make some fixing to Araki's sins (/♡▽♡)/

– now, I think that once everything is clear, its too much to say that this is a genderbend story so, if you don't like it get out of here and don't read ( コ 'ヮ' コ)

– also, this contains Diojona, Caejose and Jotakak with tiny hints of Avpol so, don't like it, DON'T READ („• -・„)■

– as a TW, I have to say there will be referenced rape/non-con situations so I will put a warning in advance to avoid triggering any of you ♡

well, too much talk for now and this chapter is long AF so... ENJOY

The year is 1983, almost one hundred years after the passing of Johanna Pendleton-Joestar and almost fifty years since Joseph Joestar faced the biggest threat to human kind in his time.

Now, after so long, in the middle of the Atlantic Ocean, close to the African coast and the Canary Islands, a boat softly rocked with each wave that hit it, pulling up a treasure long ago forgotten from the deepest parts of the ocean, a memory of the tragic past of a family condemned to repeat the tragedy over and over again, due to three idiots that, guided for their greed and power-hunger, brought back something that should have been kept forever deep down.

“W-We did it!” one of the three men cried out as their boat lifted up a coffin that had different types of marine life attached to it “We finally managed to rescue the treasure that sank one hundred years ago!”

“Alright, be careful” the other man, who was beside the first one that spoke, said as he watched his companion pull close to them the rope they used to pull up the heavy item “Relax! Bring it carefully”

“I know! I know!” the first man hissed as he grabbed the rope and pulled the coffin to them, receiving the second man’s help “A little bit more…”

“Don’t you think that is a little bit larger and narrow to be a treasure chest?” the third man, the one that was commanding the machinery, said as he pulled a bit more up their discovery.

“Hey! You lifted it up too much!” the first man complained without letting go of the black object.
“Well, let’s put it down” the second man suggested as he changed his hold in the coffin.

“One, two, three!”

With the combined strength of the three, they managed to lift up the coffin to finally put it down in front of them as they freed the black wooden material of the ropes that held it as the sun started to descend and hide in the west, the warning they needed to know how late it was quickly getting.

“Quick! I want to see what it has!” the first man tried to hurry the third man, showing how impatient he was to open their treasure.

“Wait a moment… How weird!” the third man, who was the only one shirtless, begged, looking down at the lock the coffin had “This box is sealed from inside”

“Who cares?!” the first screeched, hitting the dark box with an open palm “Open it with hits!”

“Wait a minute!” the shirtless man begged to the other one as he noticed something “It has something signed on” then, he used the large blade to whip away the little mineral that hide the last letter that belonged to the coffin.

“D… I… O…” he mumbled once the letters were free “Dio… Could it be a name?”

“Who cares?!” the first man shouted once again straight into his face as the other two came to kneel beside him “It’s gonna get dark!” he “explained” “When it gets dark, we won’t be able to see anything!”

“You are right…”

“Good, I’ll go get the blowtorch”

“It’s time to get our fortune!”

As all of them left to look for what they needed, once alone, a click was heard as the coffin opened
itself at the same the sun started to disappear from the sky, leaving behind the sound of a hissing from the deepest of the wooden box, sealing the future of the three idiots that dared to play an insignificant part in destiny’s play.

Meanwhile, in the darkness of the coffin, a pale hand caressed long curly strands of black hair while sharp amber eyes looked out for the others.

One day, a lonely boat appeared without passengers.

The ship didn’t show any technical damage nor signs of being attacked.

All that was left were three cups of half drank coffee and an open steel case alongside with an acetylene torch.

The box was completely empty and it had two compartments, something that was strange since it seemed that it been housing two persons.

It was said that once stored a lost treasure but, after some months, everyone forgot about it, without knowing that his release was bond to bring a new adventure to the ones that bare the Joestar name with a star-shaped birthmark on their bodies or had the Joestar blood coursing through their veins…

Now, the year is 1987, in Japan, a blonde and petite middle-age woman named Holly Kujo (née Joestar-Zeppeli) found herself standing inside a police station, standing in front of two police officers that some minutes ago had called her to inform her about the newest fight her only son had gotten into.

“Kujo Jotaro, seventeen years old, height: 1.95 meters” one of them (the oldest) started to list to her to see if the description matched with her son’s “His father is Japanese and a jazz performer, he is on tour” he continued “His mother is American with British ancestry”

“There is no doubt, Jotaro is my son” Holly answered, holding the white handkerchief she had pulled close to her face as she held a face full of worry and sadness.
“It seems that his friends call him “Jojo” due to the “Jo” in Kujo and the “Jo” in Jotaro being close to each other…” the youngest of the two said, letting out a dry laugh to slip from his lips “What nonsense…”

“So…” she started but stopped to shallow the lump that had formed in her throat “How many people did Jotaro kill?!” she asked but immediately regret it as she shielded her ears and moved her head from side to side “No, don’t tell me! I don’t want to hear it! No!”

“Eh… Who said something about murder?”

“He got himself into a fight” the youngest officer explained to the blonde woman, who continued to refuse to listen, getting her to stop moving with a surprised and confused look on her face for the words he just had said.

“In fact, the thugs he faced carried nunchakus and knives” the oldest explained as he held four fingers up to her “Without mentioning that one of the four of them was an ex-professional boxer” he added “Between the four of them, we could count fifteen fractures and he also destroyed their testicles… Oh sorry” he apologized for his slip “And all of them ended up in the hospital”

“Oka-san, make sure to give him a good scolding!” the youngest officer told her as the oldest started towards one of the desk close to them.

“Sure!” she agreed, but it was an empty promise since her mind was busier into getting to her son as fast as she could to hold him close to her.

“But that’s not the main problem” the oldest commented as he passed the woman in the desk the files he used with Jotaro’s information “Could you copy and distribute this?” once the woman in the desk left after agreeing to his command, he turned to her “You have a weird son”

At his words, Holly made a confused sound with her throat before following him quick when she saw the gesture he made her that told her to follow him as they made their way into the jails where she could tell her son was in.

“Come in” he told her “I’ll escort you”
“Thank you” she thanked as they started to walk in the dark hallway as the other officer closed the heavy door behind them.

“I want you to take him home, please”

“What? You already freed him?” she asked him in surprise, not expecting that so soon since she knew how the Japanese police worked after Jotaro got into so many fights over the years.

“We can’t keep him forever” he explained to her as they started to make their way down the stairs, getting her to hum in agreement and understanding “By the way, oka-san, your Japanese is excellent” he praised her “How long have you been living in Japan?”

“Twenty years”

“It doesn’t surprise me” he told her as they passed a fellow officer and he saluted him “We have been very busy lately” he started to explain when they turned in a corner “There is even a waiting line for the jails”

“Your son is right ahead”

The words the youngest officer told her were what she needed to let go of her emotions and be guided by them so she left the duo behind and started to run towards her precious son with a shout of his name “Jotaro!”

As she ran, Holly could hear and see the flashes of old times from where her son was younger and all the process of his development, making her heart ache as she desperately searched for him.

“Jotaro, throw the ball to mommy!” she heard herself say to her four-year-old son as he picked up the red ball she threw at him as he smiled up at her “Very well!”

“Do well in the sports’ festival” she remembers telling him when he was only nine.

“Yes!” he had answered her with a big smile on his face before leaving a kiss to her cheek.
“Jotaro…” she mumbled as she kept running in the dark halls, more desperate to reach her baby.

“Today is a special day! What would you like to eat?” she had asked him on his entrance ceremony right after he got in.

“I prefer to eat whatever you cook, mama” he had told her, filling her heart and making her feel complete.

“Jotaro… Jotaro… Jotaro… Jotaro…” she continued to mumbled as she kept running as fast as she could while flashes of him while growing up passed in front of her “Jotaro!”

“Shut up! What a scandalous bitch!” he greeted her as he looked at her with sharp blue-teal eyes from down his hat, similar to the one her husband, Kujo Sadao, used as he sat in one of the beds inside the jail.

“Yes!” she agreed with a bright smile on her face as she came to a stop in front of his jail.

♡

Holly admired her son for a while and smiled at him, glad that he was fine and doing well, receiving a scold and cold shoulder from him that got her smiling even more, only stopping when she heard the two males that guided her stopping back from her, turning right to them.

“In reality, my son is really sweet and kind” she explained to them since lots of people tended to misunderstand his attitude, except from her baby bother Julius Joestar and her mother, Caesia Anthonia Joestar (née Zeppeli), the only two that seemed to understand him the best “He is not the kind of person that could commit such atrocity”

Before she could continue, the younger officer launched forward and kicked the bars with one foot, making her look back at her son who now lay above the bed at one side.

“Hey! Don’t sleep, Kujo!” he shouted at her boy “You are free, get out of there!” he continued as he pointed at him with a finger “What part of “Go home” you don’t understand?!”
Silently, Holly watched as her son moved a bit so he was using one arm as his support to look back at the officers and herself with cold blue-teal eyes, making the officers gulp at the same time he moved to be facing them but still laying down on bed.

“Mama, go home” he simply told her with his hard voice “I won’t get out for a good time” his words left her feeling more worried than before, expressing it in a worried gasp that escaped her lips, something he must have caught as he proceed to explain “I’m possessed by an evil spirit”

Jotaro’s words were so simply and calm that anyone else could miss how he was feeling, but Holly was his mother, so she could see beyond him.

“I don’t know what he could make me do” he continued to explain to the rest, but she could tell he was trying to explain himself to her “Even during the fight, I tried to stop the evil spirit” and that, he went back to lay down “Don’t make me leave this jail”

Her blue-teal eyes never left her son’s form as the oldest officer let out a sight beside her “My God… You understand what I was talking about, oka-san?” he asked her, totally frustrated “We told him that we freed him, he answer us that folly and refuses to go out” he sounded worried and exasperated, feeling it even more when he leaned to whisper to her “I’m sorry, but is your good on the head?”

“This isn’t a hotel!” she heard the younger officer slightly complain due to their current position.

Her personality might made lots of people think she was naïve and more, but Holly knew better than to mistrust and brush aside what her son just had said.

Since little, she was able to heard from her papa, her mama, great nonno Erin, great nonno Speedwagon and nonna Lisa Lisa all about the stories, the adventures and all the weird stuff her family line had gone through due to their source of birth, stories that always made her feel proud of her family background when she got to see how things had ended up for them after her papa and mama faced the Pillar Men and her great nonna got rid of their ultimate family foe.

But now that she was older, married to a nice man and a mother, she knew it would be a matter of time before the promise her dear great nonna Johanna Pendleton-Joestar made herself and all her descendants had gone through to free their family from the curse of Dio Brando was meant to resurface since, by what her great nonnos had told her, he was meant to raise once again.

Before she could lose herself in her thoughts, some of the prisoners came running towards the bars and started making grabby hands to them in panic.
“Please, change us from cell!” one of them begged in a cry.

“What he is saying is true!”

“He possess an evil spirit!”

“It’s scary!”

“Don’t let us be in the same room!”

“I told you to shut up!” the youngest officer shouted to the prisoners as he got close and hit the bars with his can to kept them at bay.

But then, the sound of a can being open filled the room and made the blonde look back at her child, watching as he opened a soda can that wasn’t with him some minutes before, watching him drink the liquid from the hole he made in it with a pen instead of opening it in the normal and traditional way.

“W-What is that?”

“But you are inside of a jail!” the oldest officer shouted as he pointed to Jotaro “How did you get it?!”

“I already told you” Jotaro said after he finished his drink and burped, making the other men to run to the end of the cell “The evil spirit” he simply added as one manga that was on his bed started to float and fall right into his hands “The spirit brings them to me”

Then, they heard the radio he suddenly had with him to start singing as it was turned on “Still in the ring! Still in the ring! Still in the ring!”

“He is listening to the radio while reading the *Shonen Jump!*” the oldest officer shouted in surprise as he gripped the jail bars.
“But, how?!” the younger officer asked the million-dollar question Holly was making herself “This is wrong! Definitely wrong!”

“Stop!” the black-haired teenager commanded the two as he stood up from his bed “Surely you still want to release me” he pointed out as he took off his hat and let them see his curly strands “I’ll show you how scary it can be” and then, he started to walk to them with determination “To show you how dangerous releasing me will be…”

As he stopped in front of the officers, Holly saw the way a fast, muscular and purple arm dash from her son’s outstretched arm as it grabbed the gun that belonged to the youngest officer and pull it towards him, breaking the rope that securely held it in place.

“My gun!” the man shouted in panic “How did he do it?!”

“We are in trouble!”

Due to their words, Holly knew right away that they weren’t able to see what she just witnessed so she quickly turned to look at her son, who held the gun pointed to them as the muscular arm put it inside his big hand.

“Hey! Didn’t you see the evil spirit?!” he asked them, but didn’t wait for an answer as he moved the gun till it was pointing at his head “If you didn’t see it…”

When the sound of the trigger being pulled in its place echoed in the room, she started to panic for real “Jo-Jotaro!” she shouted to try to stop him while she looked at him wide-eyed.

She heard the shocked gasps from the males around her while she trembled in fear as Jotaro shot the bullet towards his head, but calmed only a little when the smoke from the shot dissipated and allowed her to see the same purple and gloved hand from before holding the bullet while her son heavily breathed.

“There is someone behind me” he commented as he pulled back his arm at the same time the purple hand did with the bullet and placed the gun in front of him to be taken by the officers “It seems that I’m possess”

“His grandfather Joseph also had this strange powers…” Holly told herself as she watched him
“What is going on with my son?” she asked herself in despair, worried about her child.

STAND NAME  

Power: ??? - Speed: ???

Range: ??? - Durability: ???

Precision: ??? - Growth Potential: ???

STAND MASTER  

Kujo Jotaro

After some desperate calls she made to New York, Holly Kujo ran around in the New Tokyo International Airport looking for the man she had called for and hadn’t seeing in so long that her heart burst with happiness inside her chest when she finally found him.

“Papa!” she happily called for the man with a big smile on her face as she jumped in her place to make him notice her “Here I am, Papa! Here!”

“Holly!” her father, Joseph Joestar, shouted in happiness when he saw her “Hey, get out the way!”

As he came running to her after pushing the poor man that had the misfortune to be on his way, she dashed to him and hugged him tight on the chest “Papa!”

Once they were inside each other embrace, Holly let him spin her around as they happily laughed, happy and content to be together once again.
“What a joy that you came!” she told him with a big smile and voice tainted with emotions.

“I can be anywhere on the planet in less than twenty-four hours if my only daughter needs me!” he honestly told her, making her cuddle into him, glad to be with him.

“Where is mama?” she asked him out of habit, her heart a little hurt to not see her around “Where are i miei fratelli?”

“Complaining somewhere” her father immediately answer her, his habit of teasing his wife and sons even when they weren’t around raised as he grinned “I told them that it was a business trip for the Joestar Real-Estate Agency”

He laughed in satisfaction for having succeed in hiding the real intention to his wife and sons but it was quickly whipped from his face as he heard someone clearing his voice from behind him and his daughter.

“You have always being shitty when it comes to hiding, Old Man” the one that cleared his voice said, making him quickly turn his head to the sound since it was awfully familiar, making him open his eyes really wide as he came to two pair of blue eyes burning into him that belonged to a brunet and blonde young males.

“Give the Old Man a break, big bro” the brunet man told the first one, smiling widely to the father and daughter duo “I don’t think he would be able to hold the shit storm mama has prepared for him”

The brunet’s words made a shiver run down Joseph’s back since, after fifty years, he was still scared shitless by Caesia’s anger.

“Your mother?” he managed to ask in a strangled voice that didn’t belong to him.

“Oh, yeah” the blonde male answer as he smirked to him “Prepare to die, Old Man”

Joseph was about to ask more since he didn’t want to die as the feeling of dread came to him, but he had to stop himself as Holly stopped snuggling to him and watched with shinny blue-teal eyes at her baby brothers.
“Julius! Harry!” she shouted in happiness as she got out of his hold and ran to her brothers, throwing her arms around the two of them and held them close “I missed you two so much!”

Meanwhile Harry Joestar (the brunet) looked happy and snuggled to his big sister, Julius Joestar (the blonde) looked a little bit annoyed by his sister’ tight embrace for a couple of seconds before he smiled widely and snuggled her, the three siblings imitating a trio of puppies seeking affection from each other as they were finally reunited after so long.

Meanwhile, Joseph almost coed at the scene of his children like that, but the dreadful feeling of his wife coming to hunt his ass scared him to the core.

“Wait, Julius!” he called for his oldest son “Where is your mother?!"

But his blonde son only opened a blue eye and smirked at him, refusing to give him a straight answer, making Joseph feel more desperate to know about his wife’s whereabouts, but the words he was about to say died on his mouth as someone cleared their throat behind him.

“I hope you have good explanation to all of this, Joseph Joestar” a feminine and little raspy voice said behind him, making him shiver as he slowly turned back to come face to face to his wife, Caesia Anthonia Joestar, who was burning holes in his head behind the black sunglasses she was wearing.

“Caesia!” he screeched as he tried to put some distance between them since the murder aura coming from her slim frame made him jump back, resulting in him falling ass first into the ground “H-How are you?” he asked her with a strangled voice, trying to keep it all down and not show how terrified he was.

“Don’t come at me with any kind of shitty excuse, Jojo” she warned him as she took off her glasses, letting all the present to see her fierce green eyes that had aged pretty well thanks to the wrinkles around them “You should have told me about it if it involved my precious daughter and precious grandson”

“I thought you were in Italy” Joseph tried to excuse himself as he backed out as she got closer to him “I thought you were busy training more Hamon prodigies”

“You are lucky that I got Rosas to tell me about your whereabouts in time since I would have kicked your ass for lying to me about something so serious” she said as she kept approaching him
“Things would have been ugly for you if he didn’t…”

Her words sent more shiver down his spine, getting him to shiver in panic as he kneeled in front of her and gripped the material of her elegant pants to beg for mercy “Forgive me, my love!” he falsely wailed as he hid his face on her stomach, not caring about his hat that fell to the ground and the obvious snickering their sons were making due to the scene “Please, I don’t want to die!”

“Hey, Jojo!” Caesia said as she tried to separate him from her body when the stares from the bystanders stilled in them, making her blush in embarrassment “Stop making a scene! People are staring at!”

Loyal to her words, Joseph moved his face so his cheek was pressed into her stomach as his arms wrapped around her waist, burning holes to the idiots that were staring at them “And what are you looking at?!” he shout at them with a strong voice, getting the idiots to stop staring and go back to their own business while his sons started to laugh really hard and let go of their sister as the bend to avoid any stomachache.

“Mama!” Holly shouted at her mother and ran to her, earning herself a tight hug from Caesia, who held her daughter close to her, crushing Joseph in the middle of their embrace.

“Hello, my little principessa” the light blonde greeted her daughter as she pet her hair while Joseph struggled to get out of the females’ embrace, managing to stand up to hold his two girls close to his chest with a big smile on his face “It’s being so long”

“It has!” Holly agreed with her mother as she watched her brothers coming to them, opening her free arm she had to accept Harry’s hug while her mother accepted Julius’ one “I’m so happy to have you all with me!”

The family of five hugged each other tightly, enjoyed the family moment after being apart after so long, letting the love, respect and affection they had for all of them burst in their embrace.

Surprisingly, Holly was the first one to separate from the embrace, making the others to let go of each other as she bend down to pick Joseph’s luggage.

“I’ll carry your bag” she told him with a smile.

“You should let the Old Man carry his own stuff” Julius told her as he picked up his own “He isn’t that old”
“You can be so mean sometimes, July” Holly told his brother with a smile, widening it when she saw the way his cheeks turned red from the nickname but stopped when Harry softly hit him in the head with his fist “Besides, mama will make him carry hers”

“Damn right she will!” Harry agreed in a squeal as he avoided each “playful” hit Julius was throwing at him.

“By the way, Holly, regarding to Jotaro…” Joseph started as he wrapped an arm around Caesia’s shoulder to pull her close to him, trying to bring back the main topic of their visit “Are you sure that Jotaro said “evil spirit’”?

Both Julius and Harry stopped fighting as they looked at their sister, knowing very well that this situation affected her the worst due to her kind and sensible nature while Caesia wiggled out of her embrace with her husband to kneel beside her daughter as she fell to her knees in despair.

“My poor Jotaro!” the blonde cried out as she hide her face on her hands, feeling her mother rub little circles on her back “Yes, the police said that they couldn’t see it, but I could!” she confessed as her father kneeled in her free side and placed a comforting hand on her back “I saw an arm that wasn’t his… And it grabbed the gun…”

The Joestar father looked up from his trembling daughter to his sons and wife, who shared a knowing and suspicious look on their faces as he tried to comfort the blonde.

“Others couldn’t see it, but you could?” Joseph softly asked her to avoid altering her more.

“Exactly…” she agreed, letting herself be lifted up by both her parents so they could start going.

“Then Jotaro has been saying that he is possess, but you haven’t been feeling anything weird?” he continued to ask her as he saw Caesia rub their daughter’s back again.

“No” she said as she let herself be pulled to her brothers as they hooked an arm around hers “But Jotaro says that he won’t leave the cell till he knows what’s going on” she explained as she let Julius and Harry cuddle her “What do I do, papa and mama?”
“Relax, daughter of mine” Joseph tried to calm down his daughter “I, Joseph Joestar, am here with you, and there is nothing to worry about”

“He is right, darling” Caesia agreed with her husband as she softly smiled to her eldest child “We are here to help you get through this”

“We would be mad if we didn’t help our big sister on her time of need” Harry chirped in as he smiled to Holly while Julius humped in agreement.

“Yes…” she agreed with a little smile as her brothers started to drag her with them to the exit, eager to see their nephew.

Letting their kids walk ahead of them, Joseph snapped his fingers to signal an unknown man that wore a red and white rob to follow them as he wrapped one arm around his wife once again as they followed their children.

“In first place, I would like to see my grandson, Jotaro!” he told his daughter with severity to let her see how serious he was with all of this.

Meanwhile, Kujo Jotaro sat as comfortable as he could in the prison’s bed while he played with a remote-control car that his “evil spirit” had recently brought him alongside with the different things it had brought him in the main time.

He had lost track of how long he had been boring his mind out with the car till he made it hit the bars, unconsciously wondering where his mother had gotten herself into since he hadn’t seen her since yesterday and somewhat surprised him to not have her nagging around to convince him to get out and go home with her.

“How scary…” he heard the oldest officer that had come with his mother the day before say as he looked inside his cell “Now there are more stuffs in here... And it's also very violent... Something scary took over him...” the man rambled in mumbles “If other people hears about this, I'll surely lose my job”
Not wanting to be bothered by the stupid nagging and mental breakdown the man was having, the black-haired teen tried to pull out from the conversation and stop hearing it, closing his eyes in the process to get some sleep, but opened them when a voice he hadn’t heard in a long time spoke.

“Relax” the voice said as the owner stood behind the officer “I’ll take my grandson”

“Grandson?” he asked the man, staring at the grey-haired male that was wearing a long trench coat, a black turtle neck sweater, pants, black shoes and a hat with a particular red necklace that he knew very well.

“Our grandson” a feminine voice interrupted that didn’t belong to his mother but to a light blonde woman that wore a black suit with black heels and sunglasses, standing beside the man from before.

“Hey! What are you going to do?” the youngest officer asked to the newcomers, standing alongside his partner to stop the couple from stepping close to his cell.

“I already told you that it’s forbidden getting close to him!” Jotaro almost scolded at the way the shorter man was referring to him and his situation but didn’t voice it “Try to convince him from getting out of here, it’s too dangerous!”

“We will take care of this! We already told you!” the old man shouted as he moved the officer duo aside to step close to him while the woman beside him kept quiet as said man lifted the two with the help of their jackets and threw them aside as if they were nothing.

“Jotaro! These are your grandparents!” his mother told him as both elders walked to him as he did the same from inside his cell while other two males, one brunet and other blonde stood beside her “And these are your uncles! I know they can help you!” she told him with and edge of desperation and that usual annoying tone he disliked so much “Go out and greet your grandparents and uncles”

Jotaro, from the bits of his childhood, he remembers the four of them very well.

He remembers what it felt like to be seated on his grandmother’s lap whenever she visited as they listened to any nonsense his grandfather pulled while she and his uncle Julius tried to calm his grandfather whenever he got too excited and uncle Harry joined him in the nonsense and hyped the oldest male.

He won’t admit it and would deny it to the core, but he really missed them as he grew up and they were unable to join him the same way they did when he was younger, leaving him with only his
mother as his only company thanks to them being busy with different things like traveling all over the world (in the old man’s case) or practically living in Italy and coming once in a while due to some family business (in his grandmother and uncles’ cases).

“Get out, we are going home” the old man told him as they stood face to face each other with the bars separating them while the door was open.

“Get lost, I didn’t ask you to come” he simply said to his grandfather, not breaking eye contact with him “Help me? What the hell can you do?”

His words were directed to the old man, but he also (unconsciously) looked at his grandmother who looked like she didn’t care about his rudeness nor tried to make him talk to her with respect “It’s a bother that you have to come from New York and Italy to here for nothing” he told them “You simply cannot help me…”

Then, Jotaro pulled out a metallic finger his evil spirit had given him some seconds ago right after his grandfather and grandmother stood in front of him.

“My pinky from my artificial hand!” Joseph shouted to himself as he moved his hand and made some sound as it moved, noticing that the material of his glove was also ripped in the place his pinky was supposed to be “When did he ripped it from me?”

“Now you understand?” his grandson asked him as he used his artificial finger to point at him before turning and looking at them from above his shoulder “It was the evil spirit” and then, he threw back his finger, one he caught without much trouble.

“Don’t get closer to me” he told them “You’ll only reduce what you have left to live”

Without more words, Jotaro finally turned and walked away from them, leaving him speechless while Caesia fought really hard to hide the smirk she had on her face, somewhat amused by the attitude their grandson pulled.

“Simply incredible, I’m astonished” he told himself “And to think that he was able to trick me…”
He looked back at his wife who gave a nod with her head as she removed her glasses to voice what she was thinking through them “Yes… I exactly know what is the spirit that possessed Jotaro” as he saw what he was looking for, he gave a nod to her “However, instead of putting it in words, if he gets to experiment it physically, he will understand it better…”

But then, he discarded the idea “No, it’s better if he understands it in the physical way due to the dangers he will face in the future”

Joseph hide one hand inside the pockets of his pants, but then he pulled them out and snapped them to his companion “Avdol, it’s your turn”

As his friend stepped out from the shadows and walked to his grandson, he presented him “I present you my Egyptian friend that I met three years ago, Avdol” he said before looking at his friend “Get my grandson out of that cell”

.J.
♡
.

Jotaro couldn’t believe the nonsense his grandfather had just pulled out of nowhere.

He knew the man was insane and liked to brag about all he did in an effort to impress him, a trait that his uncle Harry had also inherited, but he couldn’t believe that his grandmother Caesia was okay with all of this since she smiled at him with pride and moved to give room to Avdol to stand in front of them.

“Stop” he said as he looked at them “He seems strong but, do you really thing that I would allow a man like him to pull me out of here just because you told him to?” he asked them, not believing their choose of moves “Of course not” he quickly denied, not waiting for an answer of their part “On the contrary, I will be more stubborn and I’ll have less wishes to get out”

“This will get a little violent” the Egyptian man, Avdol, informed him “You will end up begging for us to get you out of there since you will experience an unimaginable agony”

“It seems good to me” the old man agreed as he adjusted his hat.

“But Papa, what are you doing?!” his mother asked them in panic, obviously not wanting him to face any pain or damage.
“The Old Man is crazy, but he knows what he is doing” his uncle, Julius, commented as he pulled his mother out of the way.

“July is right, sis” his dumb uncle Harry commented as he did the same “Trust in what Papa has stored to little Jojo”

Internally, Jotaro cringed by the nickname since he hated the “little” in the family name he despised so much but kept it out of his tough exterior.

“You can’t create a scandal in here…”

“Shut up!” his grandfather snapped at the officers, who trembled in fear as the straightened their forms.

“Understood!”

“I’m terribly sorry for my husband’s behavior” his Granny Caesia apologized to the officers as she looked at them straight into the eye with her fierce and powerful green eyes “But you will make good in shutting up if you know what’s good for you two”

“Understood, ma’am!” the two idiots cried out as the trembled in added fear for her words and stepped back a little.

As a red gleam caught his attention, Jotaro looked from his grandmother to Avdol, who now was surrounded by the red gleam that resembled flames as a humanoid form came out of his back, showing a muscular body with the head of bird, flames enveloping it from the waist and down as it came out with a loud cry.

“That is-“ he mumbled, understanding what he was seeing right away but shocked to see another one of those around the Egyptian.

“Exactly” his grandfather confirmed “Avdol also has that you call “evil spirit”, an evil spirit that Avdol controls to his will!” he explained “The name of that spirit is Magician’s Red!”
Before he could properly react and do something, Jotaro quickly found himself pressed to the cell’s wall a second after Avdol’s spirit cried out, fire binds tying themselves around his wrist, neck and legs, keeping him glued to the wall as they burned his skin.

“It burns… I’m on fire! My arms are on fire!” he shouted to himself as he tried to look for an out as he felt his skin itching in pain “What is this?!"

“Kujo has stuck himself on the wall and doesn’t move…” he heard one of the officers comment, showing him that he wasn’t able to see what he was experimenting.

“I don’t know what it’s happening!” the younger officer commented “But, don’t you feel as if the temperature is rising?!” the man asked once more “It’s crazy! It’s too hot!”

As the hot hands of Avdol’ spirit grabbed him by his broad shoulders and dragged him from the wall, Jotaro let out a grunt and called out for his evil spirit that came from his front and pushed the bird-like-spirit away from him, cornering it against the bards.

He could see that it was as tall and muscular as he was, with purple skin and long and black strands that moved even when there wasn’t any wind to move them, wearing a loincloth, boots and black gloves.

“Finally, it’s here! It finally has manifested!” he heard the old man shout with excitement “And that is so visible means that is really powerful”

“Bastard…” he hissed at the Egyptian male, willing his spirit to follow his orders as he gripped the bird spirit by the neck somewhat roughly, choking the man in the process.

“It surprises me that he is capable of making it so visible” Avdol managed to choke out as the grip on his spirit was visible on his own neck.

“And to think that also had an evil spirit…” he said as he pointed to Avdol “And Old Man, the identity of the evil spirit…”

“I knew it” his grandfather agreed as he stood beside his mother, uncles and grandmother.

“We couldn’t expect less from our grandson” his grandmother, Caesia, added as she smiled as if
she had won the lottery, confusing him a little by her choose of words at such bizarre situation.

“Mister Joestar, you asked me to get your grandson out of this cell” Avdol called for the oldest of the group with his back turned to face the rest, giving Jotaro his back “I was planning to contain myself, but if we consider this unexpected amount of power, should we stop?” he asked them with a raised finger “If we continue and let it out, I must reach a level of violence that could send your grandson to the hospital…”

“It seems good to me” his grandfather, Joseph, agreed without hesitation “Try it”

“Yes sir!” Avdol exclaimed before moving his arm with a concentrated face as he willed his spirit to do as he pleased “Red Bind!”

“This is-!” he tried to formulate but was interrupted as a long fire bind wrapped his legs together, wrapped his torso and mouth, covering it as he was pulled to the bars and repeatedly slammed to them.

“It’s so hot!”

“I don’t know what it’s going on!”

“Papa! What are you doing to Jotaro?!” Holly asked with a hint of panic and desperation on her voice as she gripped her father’s coat, dead worried by her child’s well-being.

“Holly, be a good girl and keep quiet, okay?” Joseph said to his daughter to calm her down so she wouldn’t interfere and get hurt since getting Jotaro to react was vital for what they needed to do.

Sensing her oldest child distress, Caesia wrapped her arms around her daughter and brought her close to her, rubbing circles in her back to smooth her nerves the same way she used to do when she was a child.
“Trust in your father, my principessa” she told her as she softly smiled to her “Nothing bad is going to happen to Jotaro”

“Remember, little Jojo has never lost a fight” Harry reminded his sister in a soft tone as he stood at one of her sides to easy her nerves and worry.

“He is going to win and Avdol is gonna get him out of there” Julius stated in his serious self “But, even if it’s bizarre and if he loses, we can always interfere for your sake…”

Trying to smile the best she could, Holly hugged her mother tightly as she kept her eyes glued on her son to make sure he wasn’t hurt or something worse.

“I can’t… I can’t breathe…” Jotaro admitted to himself as he felt the smoke from the flames and the fire bind around his mouth starting to complicate his breathing.

“The spirit is vanishing…” he heard his mother’s muffled voice from somewhere as he kept battling to get his lungs back to properly work.

“If you can’t breathe due to the heat, your evil spirit will get weak” his grandfather nagged at him “I will reveal its identity!” he informed “It may look like an evil spirit, but it’s not” he explained “Jotaro! What you thought that was an evil spirit is a vision that has power, generated by your vital energy”

Honestly, Jotaro would like to receive this nagging from the old man’s part another time to enjoy ignoring it instead of now that all his sight was starting to get fuzzy and blurry.

“Since it appears beside you, this vision its known like Stand!”
“Stand…” he tasted the name in his mind, feeling as if something had clicked on his mind once he heard the technical of his “evil spirit”.

“Like in Esopo’s fables, the cold wind made the traveler cling to his cloak but the heat of the sun made him take it off” Avdol quoted to him with a triumphant and confident smirk “Are you ready to leave your prison, Jojo?”

“Give up…” he hissed at the Egyptian with barely contained annoyance “The reason of why I don’t want to get out is because I hurt other people without me noticing it…” he explained the others so they could understand, leave him alone and stop annoying him “I can’t deny that it interest me the fact that you also have an evil spirit…” he confessed to his current opponent “But if you don’t stop, you will die”

Once he said all he had to said, the teen kicked the table behind him really hard to his objective, the one being the toilet of the cell that broke and let out the water he needed to turn off the fire bind to freed himself, brushing aside the complains of the officers that couldn’t get a grip of getting out.

“I warned you” he said in a disappointed tone as he felt the water touch the underside of his shoes while he called for his evil spirit, who came out with a warrior cry and gripped the bars “Idiot! Don’t say I didn’t warn you!”

He willed him to roughly separate the bars and rip two of them with sharp edges, using one of them as a weapon as his evil spirit came down to stab Avdol with it, but stopped when the man turned off his fire gleam, turning around to give his back to him.

“Hey! Why do you give me your back so suddenly?!” he furiously asked the man with an edge of irritation on his tone “I’m over here!”

“Mister Joestar…” Avdol said as he sat down in the floor with his eyes closed, clearly satisfied by the sudden turn of events “As you can see, I made him get out of his cell but…”

At his words, Jotaro willed his spirit to go away and leave the pointy bar to fall right into his open hand as he disappeared, letting out a sigh as he approached his grandfather and friend, not bothering to be bothered by the fact he had unconsciously walked out of his cell.

“Did you let yourself lose?” he asked him with curiosity, wanting a clear answer to all this sudden madness.
“It’s not that…” the seated man started as he stood in front of him “I really had planned to send you to the hospital but your power is bigger than I thought”

Believing his words but wanting a straight answer, he used the pointy bar to point at him and asked once again “If I had finished throwing this steel bar, what would have you done?”

“My stand is *Magician’s Red*” Avdol said lifting up a finger to point at the bar “He could have melt a bar like that pretty easily…”

“Avdol has the same power as you…” his grandfather chirped in which made him threw away the bar that made an echoing sound as it hit the ground “Now you don’t have to stay in that cell to investigate your evil spirit”

![Heart]

---

**[STAND NAME]** Magician’s Red

**Power:** B - **Speed:** B

**Range:** C - **Durability:** B

**Precision:** C - **Growth Potential:** D

**[STAND MASTER]** Mohammed Avdol

---

After some awkward greetings between the Joestar and Kujo family, they all agreed to go to a little and nice café to relax and talk about all of the madness that just had happen in the span of so little time.

Now, the family and Avdol sat around a table that was large enough to store and hold all of them
and their drinks, giving them the chance to enjoy a little before the difficult talk started.

“What a relief!” Holly said as she cuddle to her son’ side with a smile “Finally, Jotaro got out of jail”

“What an annoying bitch…” Jotaro mumbled loud enough for the rest of his family to heard him as he let his clingy mother hug him.

“Yes!” she happily agreed, cuddling closer to him.

The other Joestars were a slightly annoyed to heard Jotaro call Holly in such a disrespectful manner but knew better than to interfere since it was Jotaro and Holly they were dealing with, except Joseph, who seemed to let out some smoke from his nostrils at the name calling his daughter received in fury.

“Hey, idiot!” he shouted to call his grandson’ attention “How dare you call your mother like that?!” he scolded before looking at his daughter “And you Holly, stop smiling!”

“Okay!” the blonde woman said but continued to cuddle a little more to her son’s side before breaking the hug as she felt him move.

“Gramps, there is one thing… I’ll ask you something that I don’t understand” Jotaro started as he raised one finger and looked at his American side of the family “How did you know about my evil spirit… No, Stand, or whatever it is?” he asked the oldest in the table “It’s the only thing I don’t understand…”

At that, Caesia put down her teacup and shared a knowing look with Joseph, silently telling themselves that the time had come and they couldn’t keep hiding what they had managed to hide after so long.

“Alright…” Joseph said with a defeated sigh “We came from New York and Italy to explain it but, in order to do it, I will have to tell the things in order”

“This has to do with the Joestar and Zeppeli family…” the oldest woman in the table explained as she leaned down on the table to let her daughter and grandson know how serious this situation was “A deal that has being around for one hundred years…”
“First, look at this pictures” Joseph requested as he pulled out a couple of pictures from his inner coat pockets and threw them to the black-haired teen, who looked at them with sharp blue-teal eyes to examine them.

“What are them about?” the teen asked as he saw the pictures of a boat, a coffin and a name crafted in golden decorations, nothing out of place but feel as if they were telling him more than what he saw.

“They are about a sarcophagus of one hundred years that was extracted from the Atlantic Ocean in the African coasts four years ago”

“Sarcophagus?” Jotaro interrupted his grandfather in confusion, curiosity taking the best of him.

“After investigating it, I discovered that it belonged to the ship where our ancestor died four generations ago” Joseph explain with hard features “In other words, my grandmother, Johanna Pendleton-Joestar”

The mention of the name rang a bell into both Jotaro and Holly’s heads as the tales of their respective childhood of the heroic tales of a woman called Johanna Joestar, who fought against the biggest foe that had taken everything from her to protect the people of her era without them knowing, resurged in their heads as they looked both in surprise and confusion at the other.

“It was empty when they checked its insides” Joseph continued to inform his clueless family members “However, I know very well what it contains!” he shouted in agitation “Avdol and I are trying to find them in this precise moment!”

“Find them?” Jotaro asked in confusion and a frown on his face “Wait a minute… It sounds as if there was people inside but, why do you refer in that way to something that was underwater for one hundred years?”

The situation itself confused him to levels that he still tried to comprehend.

Mostly due to the fact that both his uncles and grandmother were also involved in this mess when they were supposed to be in Italy and not here, especially if he wasn’t sure if they had an “evil spirit” like his.
“It’s the incarnation of evil… His name is **DIO**!” Joseph shouted as he slammed a hand in the table and stood up “He woke up after his one hundred years sleep and we are fated to fight him!”

Irritated by the exaggerated behavior his grandfather was showing, the seventeen-year-old gave a sigh and turned on his seat, looking out of the establishment to avoid looking at his crazy grandfather.

“What was that for, Jotaro?!” Joseph shouted in rage for his grandson’s disrespectful attitude “Don’t act as if this had nothing to do with you!”

“This expression means that I’m so shocked that I don’t know what to say, **Oji-san**” the boy explain as he looked back at Avdol, who hadn’t say nothing for a while.

“**Oji-san**?” Joseph asked himself as the meaning slowly (but surely) came to him while his wife patted him in the back to show some kind of comfort while his sons snorted as they tried to hide their laughter.

“You are Avdol, right?” Jotaro turned to ask the Egyptian “I don’t know who the hell you are, but it shows that you believe you are the big deal” he commented before returning to the oldest male in the table, who had his hands turned into fists in barely contained anger “And, **Jiji**, did you really expect me to believe your crazy story and pretend astonishment?”

“It seems like little Jojo doesn’t believe us” Harry whined playfully as he drank more of his teacup “What do we do now? Should we create a more convincing plan?”

“Stop calling me little Jojo” Jotaro demanded his uncle as he shot him a sharp glare “I’m not a child anymore”

Before the brunet could continue his teasing, he was interrupted by a smack on the head (courtesy from his own brother, Julius) that he returned and little breathless laugh Avdol let out as he used his elbows as his support while he leaned on the table with closed eyes to directed himself to the black-haired teen.

“But our spirits aren’t a craziness but they are very real, am I wrong?”

“As you like” Joseph simply said once he gave up, letting himself fall back into his seat “You’ll
end up believing us in any moment” he confidently stated “If you are wondering why do we know about Dio’s existence and why we look for him, *I'll show you the reason…*”

As he spoke, he offered his hand to Avdol, who simply took out a polaroid camera from his robs and placed it above Joseph’s stretched hand, making him grin in victory.

“To be honest with you, a year ago, I also got an evil spirit or, rather, a **Stand**” he explained to his family, who looked at him with careful eyes (in Jotaro’s case) and shock on their features (in Holly’s case).

“What?” Holly asked her father, looking from him to her mother and siblings to get a confirmation from their part.

“Jiji… What did you just **said**?” Jotaro asked in a hiss, not believing the words that escaped his grandfather’s mouth were real.

“Yep, he did” Julius confirmed as he crossed one leg over the other and leaned on his chair, a bored look taking over his pale features as some blonde strand fell over his forehead, shadowing his gaze “And it’s as noisy as he is…”

Before Jotaro could continue interrogating his uncle about it and how he knew about the **Stands** since he hadn’t seen any type of energy nor spirit coming from him, his grandfather called for their attention as he moved an arm that was coated with some yellow lighting as he lifted it up.

“I’ll show you… *my Stand!*” Joseph cried out while, from his hand, some short and purple vines came out of it as the light got brighter and dragged his hand down above the camera “**Let’s go!**”

As his hand hit the top of the camera and destroyed it while the energy cracked in it, a single photo came out of it, showing nothing quite yet since it was about to reveal itself.

“Do you see it?” he asked his grandson as he held it in front of him “The thorns that came out of my hand… that’s *my Stand!*” he explained “It’s power is the one of taking spiritual pictures that I had from distant places” and continued “Even though, I have to destroy a camera of 30,000 yens every time I use it…”
“See?” Julius asked his nephew in a deadpan as he leaned to whisper to him, a little fed up by his father’s exaggerated presentation “Noisy as the old man”

The proof of it was one waiter that immediately came to them and asked if something was wrong to only be brushed aside by Avdol, dismissing him right away.

“The vision that will appear in this picture…” Joseph continued his deep and loud speech “Jotaro! This vision will determinate your future!”

“What?” Jotaro asked a little shocked, not knowing how to conceal the shock away from his face like his other emotions as he looked back at his grandfather.

“Jotaro, Holly…” Caesia called for them with a gentle tone that she only used with them in moments of crisis or tension “Have you ever gave a look to the back of your necks? Or the little and light marks on your cheeks that only appear when you blush for embarrassment?”

Both mother and son let out a confused sound from the back of their throats for the oldest blonde words, not knowing how to react since, in fact, they haven’t done it.

“What are you talking about, Oba-chan?” Jotaro asked his grandmother in a tone that clearly demanded an answer and left no room for lies.

“It’s unlikely that you have done it…” Caesia continued as she looked back at her husband before returning to look at the two and point at her twin pink marks that were placed on her cheeks “I’ll let Jojo explain for me…”

“Right in my shoulder blade, I have a star-shaped-birthmark” Joseph explained right away as his wife gave him the baton to talk, pulling the back collar of his coat and shirt to show them a very visible star close to his neck “Like Caesia’s own brand, ones that you two also own…”

Immediately, Holly moved aside her tied blonde hair and let out a surprised gasp as she saw her own star on her neck as Jotaro did the same, staring wide eyed at his own birthmark, looking back at his uncles, mother and grandfather as they showed their own stars.

“Why is that relevant?” the teen asked his grandfather while he pointed back at him with a finger.
“I asked my mother about it but it seems that my father, who died young, had one too” the oldest said with an edge of melancholy at the mention of his parents, receiving a comforting squeeze from his light blonde wife, one he returned back with a tiny smile on his face “It’s supposed that all the Joestars have this birthmark…”

“Oi, Jiji” Jotaro called for his grandfather, frustrated by how he and the rest of his family danced around the answer instead of giving him the straight answer he has wanted from the very beginning “What is going to appear in that picture?”

“The fate we never imagined!”

“Papa!” Holly called for her father as she started to fear what the picture might show.

“Just show me what it is, damn it!” the blue-teal eyed boy shouted as he grabbed the picture and snatched it out from the old man’s grip once he stood up.

Slowly dragging it down so it was clear what it held, he gave a confused look once it was revealed to him what it contained.

In the picture, the teen could make the shape of woman’s naked back that was half covered by long and curly black strands of hair, allowing him to see a star-shaped-birthmark on her shoulder blade as a big hand seemed to be gripping her neck by the fingers that could be seen between the black strands while a single eye seemed to know about the picture that made Jotaro feel the single stare burning right into him, making him almost believe that the owner of said eye was smirking behind the woman’s collarbone as he watched him while some strands of the man’s blonde hair fell above his single and visible eye.

“DIO!” Joseph shouted the name of man in the picture “He is always the one who shows on my spiritual pictures!” he explained while Jotaro kept his eyes glued to the picture “And the woman in the picture that always shows herself with him is no one else but my grandmother… Johanna Joestar! That bastard took her too!”

At the revelation, both mother and son stared wide eyed and completely shocked at Joseph, surprised by his words and for the bizarre situation, also looking back at Caesia, Julius and Harry that didn’t seem to be surprised, as if they already knew what had happened.

“One hundred years ago, something happened in the Atlantic Ocean…” Joseph started to explain
the two clueless members of his family “I only know what my grandfathers, Erin Pendleton and Robert E. O. Speedwagon, mentioned me, but it seems that DIO was able to get himself a body, took my grandmother with him and forced the two of them to survive!”

It was obvious that Joseph was furious with all of it as he almost ripped the picture away from Jotaro and stared it with a fire burning on his emerald-green eyes as his eyes roamed his grandmother’s figure and came to a stop to the single eye that was from the man he hated the most.

“And there is no doubt that he is hiding somewhere, planning his misdeeds…” he said as he slapped the picture and held it to his only daughter and grandson “It has been four years since their return to life and the fact that my spiritual pictures and your evil spirits started to manifest themselves this year… It’s due to DIO!”

“Our powers are known in our society as psychic powers” Avdol finally decided to explain as he stood up from his seat to stand tall beside Joseph “I have had my Stand since I was a child but your powers are tied to DIO’s and Lady Joestar’s bodies”

Before the clueless mother and son could ask, he left no room to questions as he continued “Due to the blood shared between all their descendants, you all are tied by invisible threads” he continued his explanation “It seems that the return of DIO and Lady Joestar to existence brought with them the awakening of the powers that lied dormant inside of you…”

At the revelation, Jotaro kept quiet as he tried to process the huge bit of family information that was slammed to him in less than ten minutes, working his mind as fast as he could to connect the dots so he could ask the questions he hadn’t received straight answers for.

“Avdol, you can know where they are by analyzing the picture?” Joseph asked his friend as he handled him the picture and put a hand on Caesia’ shoulder as she tried to comfort her daughter, who had paled a bit at the sudden bomb they threw at her.

“I can’t” the Egyptian confessed to them after he gave a sharp look at the piece of paper “There is almost no clue”

“That’s what I thought” he sighed as he bend down to grab his things and put on his hat so they could get going since the topics they were about to treat weren’t mean to public acknowledge.

“I’ll look more carefully” Avdol promised them as he put away the picture inside his robs to continue his task later on.
“Please” Joseph said to his friend, stopping his moves as he saw the worried and a little sad look his daughter had, look that broke his heart in the process, making him put a hand on her shoulder “Oh, Holly” he coed at her “I’m sorry for having brought this kind of news so suddenly” he apologized as he softly smiled to her to comfort her “Let’s go home…”

“Okay…” Holly agreed with her father, leaning into him as she let him pull her away.

“We will stay in Japan for a while” Harry informed his sister with a bright smile, trying to make her forget about everything and worry about other things “So it means that we will be staying at your place”

“Idiot” Julius smacked his brother in the head once again, scolding at him but smiling at his sister, the smile he reserved only for her as he tried to keep his brother’s hands away from his neck “That’s not the way to talk to our big sister”

“Hey! Stop fighting!” Joseph scolded his sons as they walked ahead of Jotaro and Caesia, who were the ones that were left behind.

“It’s okay, Papa” Holly tried to dismiss her father with a little smile, a little more relieved to be close to her loved ones before turning to her mother and son “Let’s go, Jotaro and Mama…”

Jotaro, who didn’t know how to feel, touched and rubbed (unconsciously) the place where his birthmark lay under the green stare of his grandmother, who smiled sadly to her tall grandson.

“I know you have so many question, my dear” she told him softly but firmly, knowing how well he hated when people tried to sweettalk him “But some of them won’t be answered right away”

“Why are you and the two idiots here?” Jotaro boldly asked her, not breaking eye contact from her eyes “Aren’t you three supposed to be in Italy?”

With a sigh, Caesia extended one hand, silently asking for permission, one that the seventeen-year-old allowed, receiving the touch of her cold skin against his olive cheek, caressing it with affection.

“I have some unfinished business with DIO” the light blonde simply explained, letting her eyes
show how serious she was “An unfinished business the Zeppeli family has been carrying for the same amount of time the Joestar family had been carrying theirs…”

“Which one?” he immediately asked, regretting his boldness once he could see the pain that washed over his grandmother face but decided to not back down.

“He killed my grandfather” she confessed, her sad smile turning even sadder “He didn’t die by his hand, but he still killed him when he used one of his servants to do the dirty job…” she added “I never knew him, but he was the one who gave his life for the Joestar family when he gave Johanna Joestar his Hamon in order to save her, the same sacrifice my father did to save me when he tried to avoid more victims by destroying the Pilar Men, the creators of the masks that were responsible for all of this, and honoring them by joining this cause is the least I can do to put them to rest…”

At the weight of her words, Jotaro felt a knot forming on his stomach as the touch of his grandmother left him, feeling a little guilty for making her remember such horrible acts that he knew that tied her family with his beyond the marriage she shared with his crazy grandfather.

Not being one for the sappy shit, he used one hand to pull down the brim of his hat while he offered his free arm to her, watching from his hiding place the way her face morphed from a surprise look to one full of love and pride she always flashed him since he was a kid and whenever they managed to see each other, watching her accept it and cuddle with him as they walked towards the rest of their family.

But, even when he felt the warm his grandmother gave him, Jotaro could feel the same dreadful feeling that had come to him right after the Old Man had taken the picture which made him touch the place where his birthmark lied.

In an unknow place, inside a dark mansion that was illuminated by the light of the candles that were messily laying around, a naked body that belonged to a noirette female and the shirtless body of a tall and muscular male lied down in a large and wide sized bed that was placed in the large and dark room.

The man in question who had blonde hair, hissed as he sat down on bed as he felt the body beside him shiver, letting him know of what they had been feeling lately in the last few days.

“It happened again…” he mumbled as he pulled close the noirette’s body to him and caressed the curly strands as he looked at her sleeping face with sharp amber eyes and an affective look as he
watched her chest raise and fall at each breathe she took that let him know how alive she was “I felt as if someone was watching us…”

Without seconds thoughts, he stood up from the bed and walked around to release some of the tension he was feeling “It must be Johanna’s descendants…” he told himself with fury “She must be sending a type of spiritual signal to her descendants…”

That single thought created a furious ball on his throat, angry at the idea of her and the good-for-nothing of Erin Pendleton’s spawns looking for them, ready to take what was rightful his from his hands.

“It doesn’t matter… They are things of fate…” the blonde told himself as he kept pacing, stopping till he was standing in front of the discarded body of a dead woman in the stairs he stood in “A fate that I’ll get rid of… A fate that I must vanish…” he promised with an evil smirk plastered on his face “I have already started the preparations”

Without any other words, he walked back to the bed and kneeled beside the sleeping body, moving her carefully around so her sun-kissed face greeted him, letting a kiss on her forehead before leaving the room, ignoring the purple vines that started to wrap around Johanna Joestar’s naked body…

Chapter End Notes

thank you so much for reading (/\˚・\˚)/

please, leave a kudo, comment and subscribe if you liked the story so you can let me know ♡

constructive criticism is always valid and welcomes but with respect to me and my readers so feel free to give it when you see fit (つ‘ω‘づ)

hope you have liked it and don't forget to tell me what you think about this rewrite ♡

love y'all and see you next week since don't forget that I update every Friday („・・_・)■

also, take a good care of yourselves, this virus isn't kidding nor joking so we must be careful and mindful of others ♡
Who Will Be The Judge?!

Chapter Summary

And then, the Universe sang its prettiest song and allowed two new soulmates to meet as they danced in the space...

Chapter Notes

♡ before reading ♡

hey hey hey! ♡
welcome back to another chapter for this amazing fic and series after another long waiting week (つ'ω')c

I hope you guys are doing fine at the comfort of your houses in this time of global quarantine due to this sanitary global emergency and I really expect that all of you are following the rules we were given to avoid spreading this virus so all of us can take care of each other and protect our parents and other family members (・• - •・)

now, after that long reminder, back to the main topic...

OUR FAVORITE CHERRY GIRL IS HERE. MORE THAN READY TO RERO THE F OUT OF SOME CHERRIES (/▽υ▽)/

I know that this chapter may be LONG, but I don't like slipping chapters more than necessary (please, bear with me in this ꕿ · ▽ · ʔ) so I decided to place the chapters in the same way that they did in the anime (only slipping the chapters as it was seeing in the anime) so be ready to Noriko's introduction, more Joestar family drama and some cameos from other characters that are really important for the story (つ'ω'c)

if you have doubts about anything related to the story, you are welcome to ask anything you want and I will try to answer as fast as I can to make sure everything is understood (・• - •・)

now, without any other interruption, ENJOY ♡

See the end of the chapter for more notes

The sun had raised, the birds were singing and the soft breeze of the November air messed around the leaves and hair of those who weren’t careful.

From a large house that belonged to the Kujo family, Kujo Jotaro started to walk out of his house to go to school, already deciding that he had to go even after receiving the bomb of overwhelm information his grandparents had given him the day before.
“Jotaro, wait!” the black-haired boy heard his mother said behind him, making him turn around to see his mother running to him “You forgot something!”

He was sure that he hadn’t forgotten anything since he had made sure to have all the things he needed for school, stopped his train of thoughts when he felt his mother’s hand coming to rest on his chest as she smiled up at him due to him being taller than her.

“My God…” she said before using her tiptoes to reach his cheek to kiss him “Take it, a goodbye kiss”

“This bitch…” he tsked after letting her kiss his cheek, pushing her a “little” roughly away from him as she whined a little “I’m not a child anymore”

“Alright!” he heard her say to him as he walked away “Have a good day!”

Feeling embarrassed by his mother’s actions, he pulled down the brim of his hat to cover his eyes, as he sighed in exasperation “Give me a break…”

♡

It took him a while, but Jotaro finally managed to reach his school’s grounds, throwing hard stares at anyone who dared to cross his path and get into the way, something that didn’t work for the girls that looked at him in awe as he passed them, hearing their annoying voices shout in excitement.

“Look! It’s Jotaro!”

“What? Jojo?”

“That’s right! It’s Jojo!”
“Jojo!”

“Jojo!”

“Good morning, Jojo!”

“Jojo!”

“Jojo, why did you skipped classes so many days?” one of the noisy bitches asked him as they walked behind and beside him, ignoring his personal space as said bitch hugged his arm.

Not wanting to waste his saliva in snapping to her to let go, he looked down at her with cold and sharp blue-teal eyes, telling her to let go if she knew what was the best for her, but only got her to blush before another girl separated her from him with her elbow to break them apart.

“Hey!” the girl called the other as he kept walking, ignoring them and their idiotic behavior “What do you think you are doing by grabbing his arm like that?” she snapped “Don’t glue to him like that! Stay away from him!”

“What do you say, ugly?” the first girl growled at the other, totally angered by the action and the insult.

“Shut up, flat”

The first girl gave an offended yelp as the two gave each other their respective backs, glaring at each other with hate.

“Ugly”

“Flat”

“Ugly”
Having enough of their nonsense and tired of hearing their insults to each other, Jotaro stopped walking and looked back at them with fury, cringing from how exasperating they were.

“Shut up!” he snapped at them “You are so annoying!”

Sadly, his shout got him nowhere as all of them squealed in pleasure by the words he directed at them, seeing their blushing faces.

“He was talking to me!”

“No, he was referring to me!”

With a huff, he resumed back his walking to let behind the annoying bitches, ignoring their cringy shouts for him to wait for them, something he wasn’t going to do today nor anywhere near the future.

While the young Kujo boy walked towards the stairs that separated the school grounds from the entrance, in one of the side hills close to a tree, a beautiful teenage girl with cherry red hair and a long curly bang with twin short baby hairs falling on her forehead, stood close to it with a canvas of a painting of the black-haired boy she was staring at with sharp amethyst eyes, holding a brush on one of her delicate hands while her other hand held the palette she was using to finish her masterpiece.
The girl in question was tall and had a thin but curvy body, body that was well-marked by her green seifuku uniform with yellow decorations such as the lines on her sleeves and shirt alongside with the ribbon that lay on her chest, also wearing brown and short heeled shoes with white socks that allowed the others to see part of her pale legs.

Besides the traditional student clothes, the girl wore twin earrings that resembled the shape of cherries, a black velvet choker on her long and delicate neck and a long white scarf that she held with her elbows and moved around with her red strands as the November air rushed past her.

A menacing aura could be felt coming in waves from her form as she waited for the Kujo boy to walk down the stairs and, when she felt that the right moment had come, she moved in a fast motion the brush that had red paint in it, creating a large red line across his leg, smirking evilly when the screams of the other girls surrounding her objective reached her ears.

Meanwhile, as Jotaro walked down and was halfway through the large stone stairs that he was walking, a sharp pain suddenly came to his left leg, making him lose his footing and slip from the stairs, ripping a panicked scream from the girls following him.

“What?!” he managed to shout in surprise in time before he realized he was already falling down, groaning all the way down till he saw his possible savior.

“The tree branches…” he told himself and called out for his Stand to grab them to avoid his fall, thing it did as it swing him towards the bushes below the tree that cushioned his fall, still hearing the high-pitched voices of the girls rushing down the stairs to get to him.

“Did the tree branch cut my leg?” he asked himself as he touched his wound “No… It was already cut before I fell!” he realized as he tried to stand up “That’s why I stumbled, there is no doubt, even though…”

Once he was back on his two feet, the black-haired teen brushed his shoulder, he looked around to see who had caused and inflicted the wound on him while the worried shouts of the girls following him got closer, showing him that they were getting closer to him as they descended the stairs.
Having witnessed it all, the redhead from before stood at the top of the stairs, looking down at the mess she had created as she hummed sadly, disappointed for having failed but triumphant to having been able to see his Stand.

“He can summon a very powerful Stand…” she told herself as she looked down at the canvas she held between her thin fingers, smirking down at it “I see…”

Then, she threw away the canvas towards a tree branches that took hold of it as the girl closed her eyes “Now I see why they asked me to get rid of him” she mumbled before opening her eyes and pointing at the painting with her brush “Even though…”

With a precis and quick flick of her wrist, the canvas turned into tiny pieces as it was ripped apart by something the girl commanded to do, letting the brush fall from her hands to the ground “He is no rival to my Stand”

“I was really scared”

“Are you okay, Jojo?”

“Are you okay, Jojo?”

“You were very lucky” one of the girls said as they surrounded Jotaro to see if he was okay, something he ignored as he looked in each pocket from his clothes for something that could stop the bleeding “About fifteen centimeters more and you could have fallen down the sidewalk”

“Those stairs are very dangerous”

“From tomorrow on, you should hold my hand before descending the stairs, Jojo” another girl commented while he brushed the dirty away from his clothes and bend down to pick up his bag, making the other girls look at the one that just spoke with fury and jealousy for her shameless words.
The sound of heels hitting the stone stairs stopped any type of confrontation between the girls, making Jotaro stare with wide eyes at the floor in front of him as the sound of the heels stopped in front of him and a girly figure overshadowed the sunlight as she came to a stop.

“It seems that you cut your leg” the girl with red hair and green uniform pointed out as she offered him a handkerchief with a polite smile “You should wrap it with this” she suggested and let it fall on his hand once he grabbed it “Are you okay?”

“Yes, it’s only a scratch” he said as he did what she suggested but only used the cloth to clean some of the blood before watching her give another polite smile before she started to walk away.

Feeling something strange coming from the redhead, he decided to act upon his instincts “Wait” he called for her as he stood and offered back the delicate cloth she gave him, getting her to stop and look at him with sharp violet eyes.

“Thank you” he thanked her as he fixed on of the flaps of his black coat “It’s the first time I see you, do you go to our school?”

“Kakyoin Noriko” the girl, Noriko, presented herself as she turned her body to look at him “I just transferred here yesterday, nice to meet you”

With everything said, Noriko turned back and headed for the rest of stairs to go down towards the school’s building, disappearing from Jotaro’s view as fast as she came.

To his surprise, the annoying bitches that always followed him had the decency to start talking about the girl in question, something that made him give them some kudos for talking once said redhead was far away.

“Hey! Who does she think she is?!” one of them asked in fury as she tried to burn holes in the other girl’s head “Acting as if she was Jojo’s girlfriend!”

“As if!” agreed another girl as she stared in jealousy to where Kakyoin had stood “Only in her dreams!”

“Like in yours” another one sassed the second girl before squealing “I’m the only one who will be Jojo’s girlfriend!”

“Who gave you that idea?!” snapped a fourth girl and came to be face to face with the third girl
“I’m the only one who is worthy to be Jojo’s girlfriend!”

“In your dream, flat!”

As he heard them start bickering again, Jotaro unconsciously touched his birthmark, feeling a ghostly touch in it that made him feel uncomfortable as he rolled his shoulder to free himself of the sudden tension he felt.

Cold and large fingers traced circles in the soft sun-kissed skin around Johanna Joestar’s birthmark as DIO caressed her, sending shivers down her spine as he kissed her delicate neck, taking joy in seen her so vulnerable and shivery under his touches, the same way he had inflicted in her so long ago.

“In that moment, I was weak…” the blonde said once he stopped kissing the skin of his wife’s neck, standing tall and on his full height as he touched the scar that surrounded his thick neck while memories from his youth came to his mind as he spoke “Because I was just a simple head…”

He really hated the memory of him being so powerless and weak, despising till the core his failure that he had to show his wife after her interference in obtaining the body he desired and deserved.

“If it wasn’t for me stealing that loser’s body…” he snapped in fury as he moved his arms around to get rid of the drops of sweat that coursed his new body “If it wasn’t for his energy… We wouldn’t have survived those one hundred years in the bottom of the sea”

Furious and almost snarling, he came back to where his still and soulless wife stood, roughly grabbing her by the shoulder and digging his nails on her skin, not getting any type of reaction from her as she was nothing more but an empty but alive vessel “Even thought, it seems that her body possess a type of maternal bond that allows her to communicate with her descendants”

DIO removed his nails from the soft skin and brought them to his mouth, tasting the rich red liquid that only Johanna Joestar owned, moaning in pleasure as he cleaned his hand and grabbed her hand, pulling her to follow his steps towards their room as he talked to his followers that stood in the shadows, always there to listen to him.
“They know we are alive” he told them as he guided his wife, before he stopped in the stairs as the cold and mysterious fog of the mansion surrounded his legs and moved the skirts of Johanna’s dress “Besides, the new power that Jojo and I acquired… The Stands!”

Resuming his walking, he took her hand as the candles that stood around lifted up as they passed “Her Stand also affects the bodies of her descendants” he explained as the candles were turned off as they came to stand in front of the dirty mirror he kept in their room “The advantages and disadvantages go hand in hand, it’s something unavoidable”

Since his return to live, DIO had been roaming around the cold rooms of his new mansion, searching for food and servants that would be blindly loyal to him no matter what, looking for them as he looked out for Johanna Joestar, whose body remained intact as if the one hundred years they spent in the deepest parts of the ocean didn’t happen, something he made sure to keep as he fed her his blood to keep her fresh but not enough to completely bring her back.

“I have to end them…” he informed as he touched his reflection on the mirror “I have to exterminate Johanna’s family”

His servants might think he wanted to get rid of Johanna’s family for the danger they represented to him, but only two people knew the real reason behind it, those being DIO himself and Johanna Joestar’s empty vessel, one that shivered at the gravity of the situation, unconsciously worried by the child she had given birth to and that had continued the line she had sacrificed herself for.

No matter how long it has passed, DIO will always have burned on his mind the image of his Jojo on a wedding dress, standing close to the lesser of Erin Pendleton, who stood close to her in a formal suit of the time, with a one-month-old baby placed between them, the utter proof of his failure in keeping the young Joestar heir to himself, someone he knew very well that had formed his own family and spread the Joestar line like the plague, a tainted and worthless line that he was going to get rid of no matter what it took.

Back in Japan, in one of the tea rooms the Kujo estate had to offer, Avdol, Joseph and Caesia Joestar sat as the former grinded the tea they were waiting for to drink while the Joestar siblings had gone to another room to spend some quality time together.

“Why is this room so small?” Joseph whined to his wife as he looked around the said place,
imitating the traditional Japanese style Caesia was sitting in “This is why I hate Japan!”

“You usually don’t visit it that often” the light blonde deadpanned to him after she drank from her teacup “There is no point in complaining since you don’t live here and our daughter says that life in here isn’t that bad”

Not hearing any type of support from her, the Joestar male pouted before looking back at the Egyptian, looking for someone that could support his complains “Avdol, how can you deal with this?”

“I find interesting this “tea ceremony”” Avdol simply said as he raised the object that he was using to grid his tea.

“Ceremony my ass” the grey-haired male shouted as he lifted his coffee cup as he opened the cap “Instant coffee is way better!” and then, he let the coffee grains fall into his cup and poured some hot water in it, aggressively mixing it as the Italian female sighed for her husband’s actions.

“By the way, regarding to DIO…” Avdol started as he brought back the main topic of their trip, making Joseph stop his aggressive mixing and getting Caesia to put her teacup aside “Miss and Mister Joestar, now that we know about his existence, we should suppose that he also knows about us?”

The couple looked at each other for a brief second, a little worried by the possibility of DIO knowing about them, but coming to the agreement that it was likely that he already knew.

“Yes…” Joseph agreed “But while we don’t know about his next move or what are his powers…” he mumbled but paused as he drank his coffee, groaning in disgust after he finished “Japanese coffee is disgusting!”

“That’s American…” the Egyptian pointed out, making the complaining male to make a questioning sound with his throat while the only female in the room rolled her eyes and planted a kiss on her husband’s cheek to get him to shut up and stop complaining, action that earned her a tight hug on the waist as the grown-up male hugged her as if she was his plushy.
Once he reached the proper school grounds, Jotaro decided that his best option was going to the nurse office to take care of his wound before it got infected and caused him more trouble than necessary.

“Jojo, how did you cut yourself?” the nurse asked him as she stood in front of him while he rocked the chair he was sitting in. “Wouldn’t you have been fighting again?” she asked him again as she placed her hands on her hips, not being bothered by his lack of response. “And take off that hat! It’s rude!”

Sensing and seeing her coming to take his hat, he quickly tilted his head aside to avoid getting his hat snatched.

“My God…” he heard her say as she looked at him in exasperation.

“Sensei, have you ever seen Jojo wounded by a fight?” one student that lay down on one of the beds in the room commented as he looked at the woman. “That would be impossible!”

“That’s right!” agreed the second student that lay down in the bed beside the first one.

“Well, I guess you are right” she agreed as she looked for what she was looking for, laughing as a sudden thought took over her. “For the moment, I’ll think that you fell, you silly boy”

“Wait a moment” Jotaro told her as he saw the pair of scissors she had on her hands coming to his legs. “What do you think you are doing?”

“I’ll cut your pants” she answered with all the obviousness in the world as she bended more to reach him.

“Like hell you are” he told her as he stood, a little limp for the cut and the bother it produced him, facing the nurse.

“Then how do you want me to take care of your wound?” she asked him as she pointed the scissors
“I’ll take them off” he deadpanned as he hide his hands on his pant pockets “It would be a waste”

“How stingy you are…” she laughed as she turned to give him privacy to take them off and looked back at the other two in the room “Then, while Jojo takes his pants off, I’ll take your temperature to prove that you are pretending to be sick”

“I swear that is only a cold” the student #1 stated with a lazy smile on his face.

“Yeah” agreed the student #2 as he tried to dismiss her “Let us go home early”

“No” the nurse playfully said, amused by the two.

Having enough of the conversation behind him, the black-haired teen returned his look to the front and proceed to remove his long black coat, bending down to pick up the little and delicate handkerchief that had fallen and that a certain redhead had given him.

He was about to put it away inside his coat, but his blue-teal eyes quickly caught sight of something in it that he hadn’t noticed before, making him gasp as his eyes widened in shock.

“What is this?!?” he demanded to know as he held the cloth in all its length, confused by the message, reading it over and over again to comprehend it.

“Kujo Jotaro, I’ll kill you with my Stand before the day ends! – Kakyoin Noriko.” It said, threatening and promising what it said.

“Kakyoin?” he asked himself, analyzing the words with sharp eyes.

“S-Sensei!” he heard one of the other two shout in frighten, making him look back and find a scene he wasn’t expecting “What are you doing?!”

Jotaro saw the nurse that was previously all kind and sweet wave around a pointy pen to the two scared students, letting out large drops of ink as she violently, messily and recklessly moved the
item around.

“What do you think am I doing?” she asked them with a silky but threatening voice “I’m waving around the thermometer to restart the indicator”

“A thermometer?!”

“That’s a pen!”

“A pen?! That this it is a pen?!” the nurse screeched in a voice far away from the sweet one she owned “This seems a pen to you?! Are you really that stupid?!”

It took Jotaro only a second to move his sight from the woman to the ground, catching sight of a green and white tendril that was hanging from her skirt and wrapping around one of her naked legs before disappearing.

“Do you really think that this thermometer looks like a pen as you said?!” she continued to screech as foam came out for the corners of her mouth, moving her body in different and impossible ways “Then you should… Give it a… Look!”

In a blink of the eye, the nurse had managed to thrown herself forward to stab one of the students in the eye, dragging blood from the wound and blinding him in the process, ripping panicked screams from the wounded boy and the other while her actions caused Jotaro to gasp.

“She…” he said as he watched her move the pen inside the other boy’s eye.

[STAND NAME] ???

Power: ??? - Speed: ???
“MY EYE!” screeched the stabbed boy once he was free of the stab, trashing around on his bed before he fell, crawling away and following the other student that already escaped the scene, leaving Jotaro and the nurse alone.

“As she positioned her arm and threw it towards him, Jotaro caught it before it could reach him, but her strength that was, somehow, superior to his and managed to pierce his cheek, effectively stabbing him and digging the pen on his skin, dragging blood that made him hiss.”

“But then, in the middle of all, he managed to connect the dots and put the theory that connected it all “Kakyoin Noriko… Was she the one who hurt my leg in the stairs?!”

“Precisely!” a feminine voice shouted behind him, making the teen look back and find a certain cherry redhead sitting in the windowsill, with one of her long and pale legs stretched as much as she could while the other was a little folded, a menacing aura coming out from her as she smirked.

“We haven’t seen each other in so long!” Noriko playfully said as she lifted a hand and showed the marionet she had in her hands, holding it by the base to show the strings and the puppet as her amethyst eyes locked on his blue-teal eyes “My Stand possessed and controls that nurse!”
To prove her words, she moved her hand and the puppet as she continued to smirk “Attacking my Stand means hurting the nurse, Jojo”

“Bitch… Who the hell are you?!” he spitted back at her, struggling with the possessed nurse to keep her from attacking him.

“I already told you” she remarked with her smirk widening “My name is Kakyoin Noriko, and the name of my Stand is Hierophant Green” she revealed as she kept moving her puppet “I’m human, but I have sworn my loyalty to him…”

Her words didn’t seat Jotaro very well since he could tell who the young girl was referring to, and could guess why she was doing all of this.

“That’s why…” she continued before raising her voice and moved her marionet “I’ll kill you!”

Loyal to her words, the nurse started to screech once again as she dug the pen deeper on his cheek, her messy and aggressive moves made her shirt to burst open and exposed her bra-clothed-chest, something he ignored as he saw a pair of yellow eyes with a green gleam around them inside the woman’s open mouth.

Seeing that he had only one option left as he pulled himself out of the pen’s range, Jotaro pulled her hand holding the pen away from him and dragged her towards him till his chest was flushed with hers and their mouths connected in a kiss.

He heard the surprised gasp that was given for the bizarre move and the bizarre scene he made, but ignored it in favor to call out his own Stand, Stand that quickly manifested beside him once it had gripped the thing he saw inside the woman’s mouth and pulled it out of her as he separated their lips and saw the green-white, thin and feminine form of a Stand held by his own.

“I won’t hurt the nurse” he warned the girl as his purple and warrior-like-Stand pulled all the length of the other Stand as it held it with a bite on its head “Now that I can take it out, I understand…” he deadpanned as he admired it “It looks like a piece of shit that can’t do anything else besides possessing people”

Jotaro willed his Stand to bite harder into the green Stand’s head, ripping a pained wince from the redhead before moving his Stand to pull the other out even more before it held it with its two hands, gripping its neck and holding its head.

“Kakyoin, is this your Stand?” he directly asked the girl as he examined the green spirit as he
watched what looked to be its tail moving around “It’s green and has strips… It looks like a shiny melon”

“You will regret…” Noriko choked out as she dropped one leg from the windowsill “Having dragged it out of her body, Jojo”

Said girl choked out and winced once more the form of his fingers appeared on her forehead as Jotaro made his Stand to put more pressure in his hold.

“Don’t try to act all tough” he warned her as he looked back at her with fury “I can see the marks of my fingers on your forehead” he pointed out before spitting the saliva that had rushed up to his mouth “If I crush your Stand’s head like a melon, it’s most likely that your head will explode too”

Putting more pressure on his hold, the sound of his purple Stand fingers crushing a little more the other Stand made the girl wince in pain as she shakily stood “Now, I’ll keep you like that for a moment and I’ll take you to the old man and my grandmother” he “kindly” informed her, not noticing the parted windows moving suspiciously as he locked eyes with her “I know they will be happy to meet you…”

He paused for a bit but then continued “Beside, I want you to tell me more about DIO”

Before the black-haired teen could do something else, the window behind Noriko violently closed as the sound of a liquid hitting the ground called his attention, making him look at the two Stands to find Kakyoin’s one secreting a green substance from its hands.

“What?!” he asked in confusion “There is a green fluid coming out of its hands!”

“I already told you, Jojo!” the redhead shouted to him with both arms stretched in front of her thin but curvy form with her marionet in full display “I told you that you would regret it” and then, she moved her puppet as the sunlight casted a shadow around her that made her look more menacing “Kill him, Stand o’ mine, Hierophant Green!”

“I told you not to try anything weird!” Jotaro shout at her as he saw her Stand move its hands around, casting even more green liquid that the Stand handle it flawlessly, imitating the moves a broken filter did when it was broken and let go of the water it held due to its pressure.

“EMERALD SPLASH!” Noriko shouted her attack as a bunch of emeralds came out of the green liquid and shot out to both Stand and Stand user, piercing the warrior-like-Stand in the chest, opening a hole in it that threw them both away.
Due to the strength of the hit and crashing into a door and a wall, the black-haired teen spitted some blood out of his mouth as he let himself fall backwards between the debris of where he had crashed down, hearing the sound of the girl’s shoes hitting the ground as she approached them.

“How was it?” she asked as she came to a stop in front of him, placing one hand on her hip while the other held her marionet “Emerald splash… What it looked like a simple fluid coming out of my Stand, Hierophant Green, it wasn’t nothing more but a destructive energy!” she informed as her Stand manifested behind her “It pierced your Stand’s chest, for that, your inside must be completely torn…”

Jotaro groaned a little as he tried to lift his body that ached and screamed at him to give up, watching her look at the nurse with an evil smirk as the woman made choking sound and her whole body twitched.

“As for the nurse…”

As those words escaped her lips, the poor woman that was caught on their fight suffered a major loss of blood as the red liquid came out of her closed eyes, her nose, ears and mouth, creating a pool of red below her as she fell like a ragdoll towards the cold surface.

“What the hell…?!” he shouted in confusion once he managed to move his body on a sitting position “I’m sure that I dragged your Stand out…”

“I already told you…” the redhead remarked with an edge of irritation on her voice “Attacking my Hierophant Green would mean hurting the nurse” but even with irritation on her voice, she explained as her Stand moved its tail as it pulsed, imitating a snake “My Stand has a larger reach than yours but hates the open spaces”

“It prefers to hide inside other things but, if you pull it out, it gets angry” she continued as her Stand firmly stood beside her “That’s why, when it came out of her throat, it hurt her” she stated, pointing a finger at him “It’s all your fault, Jojo! It’s your responsibility!”

He bite and swallowed down her words, shadowing his eyes with his hat as his body shook and twitched with his barely-repressed fury.

“It was you, Jojo! You did this!” Noriko continued to point out in shouts “If you just had let yourself be murdered, the poor nurse wouldn’t have gotten hurt!”
Having enough of her, he used the broken part of the wall as his support while he shakily stood, even when his body heavily protested.

“You will try to get up?” she asked him as she watched him closely “How sad…” she said with faked sadness and a sigh “If I had to compare you with something, I would compare you with a punching bag in front of a boxer”

Not commenting nor interrupting her monologue, the black-haired teen finally stood on his full height, giving some hesitating steps that made him move his arms like a lifeless doll as he tried to regain his footing, not lifting his gaze from the ground quite yet.

“You just only got up to receive a beating”

Completely feed up, he come to a stop in front of the passed out nurse, connecting his blue-teal eyes with cold amethyst ones that looked back at him, sharp and ready to catch any sudden moves.

“I, Kujo Jotaro, have been tagged as a rebel” Jotaro started as he let his anger and fury take over his aura, ready to strike back at the girl in front of him “I tend to shatter my opponents when I fight, some of them are still hospitalized. Once, I gave a lesson to a brainless professor and I haven’t gone back to school ever since” he confessed, somehow warning her of what was about to come to her “In restaurants that serve me disgusting food, I make sure to not pay the bill”

“Even though… Even me…” he said as his Stand’s aura started to surround him “I recognize a despicable evil when I see it!” he continued to explain, this time shouting to show his fury “Evil uses the weak for its own good and then step on them… Specially if is a woman! That’s exactly what you did!”

With a pointed finger at his enemy and a quick look at the nurse, he let his words be tainted with his anger “None of your victims nor the law can see your Stand! That’s why…” he shouted as he pulled up the brim of his hat to show her his furious gaze “I shall be your judge!”

“Evil?” Noriko frowned for being referred like that before her previous smirk returned to her pale face “You are wrong” she corrected as she moved her puppet “Evil refers to the losers and justice belongs to the winners… The last one standing!”

Flawlessly, she willed her Stand to come out of her, making it extend its tendrils to surround and attack him “The method is irrelevant!”

Seeing the tendrils coming to him, Jotaro quickly jumped to the side and used the wall in it as his
impulse to get out from where he was cornered, landing close to a table that he threw at the girl with the help of his Stand, table that the girl caught with her Stand’s tendrils and destroyed it before it could harm her, moving the tendrils till they wrapped around his legs, arms and torso.

“The loser is the evil one” the redhead continued her speech as the physical form of Hierophant Green manifested beside her and pulled up her marionet in the same pose her Stand used when attacked “Take my final hit!”

“What? The evil one is the loser?” he asked her in a hum as his gaze was shielded by his hat, letting his amusement take over him “I must warn you, I don’t care that you are a girl”

“EMERALD SPLASH!”

“Good! In that case…” he smirked and called his own Stand to shield him, catching the emerald projectiles in his arm before throwing them back to his attacker with a warrior cry.

“What?!?” the girl asked in shock, not believing what her eyes were seeing “Impossible! How could he reject my Emerald Splash?!”

“You are the loser!” Jotaro told her a he pointed a finger to her, smirking as his Stand rushed to the redhead and grabbed her Stand by its neck, roughly shaking it back and forth.

“ORA! ORA! ORA! ORA! ORA! ORA!” the warrior Stand cried out repeatedly as he attacked, making the girl spit blood from her mouth as she choked before he pulled his arm back and closed each of his finger in the palm of his open palm before throwing a powerful punch towards Hierophant Green straight into its head once before doing it again as he continued to cry out.

“The one who shall judge you…” he said to the girl as his Stand lifted up the girl’s one and punched it, throwing it away “Will be my Stand!”

The strength of the hit caused the whole building to shock and made the windows all over it explode as Noriko’s marionet spanned out of its strings while she screamed in pain, blood coming out of her whole body due to the wounds inflicted on her Stand.

“What a powerful Stand…” she mumbled with trembling eyes and body before she fell backwards with a hard thud, creating a pool of blood below her as she collapsed and lost consciousness.
“It’s true that you managed to hurt his chest…” he admitted as he whipped the blood on his mouth with the sleeve of his coat “I’m glad that it isn’t a weak Stand, but I have the feeling that it would turn more violent” and then he walked away from the redhead, approaching the fallen nurse “That was close…”

Once close, he kneeled close to her and checked for her vitals, letting out a sigh of relief once he felt them “It seems that her wounds aren’t mortal”

Before he could do another move, the emergency bell rang and broke the silence that had installed itself all over them as the shouts of other adults started to get close.

“What was that?! A gas explosion?!”

“It came from the infirmary!”

“Don’t leave the classroom!”

“I guess they will take care of it” the blue-teal eyed boy sighed as he stood up and walked towards the fallen young girl, staring at her passed out and bloody features for a while before carefully picking her up to carry her in bridal style, saving her dignity a little instead of placing her on his shoulder like a potato sack.

“I will skip classes today” he said to no one in particular as he moved to the broken window “I’ll make her explain some things about Dio”

Using the wall beside them as his support, Jotaro jumped out from the building and out of it, walking out of the school grounds as if nothing had happened, telling himself that this was the first time he had faced an enemy Stand user, coming out as the winner.

. 

. 

[STAND NAME] Hierophant Green

**Power:** C - **Speed:** B
Meanwhile, back at the Kujo estate, Julius and Harry Joestar found themselves helping their sister tending the clothes that she just had washed, spending all the quality time they could spend together since they hadn’t been able to do after so long.

While Holly got married and moved to Japan with her husband, both boys decided to take a full path into the Hamon world since they had always being intrigued by the wonders of said art, following their childhood desire to be part of said world their parents had formed themselves in when they were younger, wanting to keep said family tradition thanks to the tales their parents used to retold them before they went to sleep about two incredible and very talented Hamon users, their dear great-granny Johanna and granny Lisa Lisa, alongside their bizarre great-grandpa William and their hero, grandpa Mario Zeppeli…

“So, big sis” Harry, the youngest of the bunch, started, hanging some of the white shirts his sister had lent him to take care of “How has life been treating you?”

“Very well” Holly replied with one of her biggest smiles as she hanged up the bed sheets she was folding, her heart full of happiness that might burst of her for having her siblings and parents close to her.

“Have you ever thought of the possibility of visiting, I don't know, New York or Italy?” Julius, the middle child, asked with pretended innocence as he also hanged up some clothes he had picked up from his sister's basket.

At that, Holly let out a exasperate sigh but kept smiling, knowing very well what conversation it was going to drag the obvious small talk her brothers were trying to give her.

Since moving to Japan, she knew that not only her father missed her dearly and wanted to keep her in New York as much as he could, but also her brothers since it was obvious to her how much they ached to be the three of them once again before they made their own separated paths.

She really loved them and was very attached to them, letting them threat her as if they were
children and she doing the same with them since she knew they missed the old times, but she preferred staying in Japan with her son, taking care of him the best she could even when her husband, Kujo Sadao, was absent most part of the year.

“No, not really” she told them as she continued to fold more clothes “Thinking about it, I haven’t been in there for a long time...”

“Yeah” Julius agreed as he walked where she was standing to pick more clothes to hang up “It has changed so much since you moved here and we know you would love to see it”

“Yeah!” Harry agreed in a higher tone as he approached them both with a triumphant smile on his tanned face “Besides, Aunty Suzie and Rosas miss you very much”

Before she could answer, the blonde woman felt something pulse inside of her that called her towards her son’s picture that she had placed on a table in the room that was in front of the courtyard assigned for the clothes, immediately running to it without saying much to her brothers, who quickly followed her to see what was wrong or if something bad happened.

To her siblings surprise, they saw her pick up and cuddle with a picture of a younger version of Jotaro, who in the moment had his hat complete instead of the hats he wore that blended with his black and curly strands of hair.

“My Jotaro must be thinking about his mother in school!” Holly squealed as she nested the framed picture inside her arms in a lovingly way, moving from side to side, getting them to smile at her display of affective and goofy personality “It’s like our hearts are connected”

“Of course not”

The sudden intervention of a strong voice caused the three siblings to jump and scream in fear, making Holly drop the picture from her hands while Harry jumped in the air and made the famous Zeppeli jump™ that made him land right into his brother’s arms, clinging into him as if his life was depending on it as he wrapped his slim arms around the blonde man’s head as said man stood frozen in the spot at the sudden entrance of his nephew, catching him by surprise after letting out a high pitched squeak.

“Jotaro!” Holly nervously shouted as she quickly approached her child “What happened in school?!” she asked him before noticing the bloody face of an unconscious girl inside his arms “Who is she?! She is bleeding everywhere!”
But then, a thought flashed in her mind that had her staring wide eyed at the scene and covering her mouth, refusing to believe it “Wouldn’t have… been you?”

“That’s none of your business” Jotaro answered in all his fashion as he arranged his hold on the unconscious girl and walked away from the trio “I’m looking for the old man and Granny, sucks having to find them in this huge house…”

“I think they are in the tea room with Mister Avdol” the blonde woman informed her child as she watched him walk away as herself and her siblings looked at him from the door’s frame.

“Oh, Jotaro, you don’t tell nothing to your mother” she lamented to herself as she started to rub circles in the sliding door with sadness taking over her and her features “Even when I… Even when I worry about you”

It was no secret to the family that Jotaro’s change of attitude affected Holly in a deeper way than the rest members of their family, no matter how much she tried to hide it from her parents and siblings or how much effort she put to understand her child’s rude behavior and tried her best to do what she thought that was right so, feeling the depressed aura coming from her as she kneeled to pick the fallen picture, Harry stopped hugging his brother and approached his sister, kneeling at one of her sides, rubbing her back and smiling softly at her.

“Hey” the brunet said to her once she looked at him “You worry too much, I bet it’s all a misunderstanding”

“Yeah” the blonde sibling agreed as he kneeled on her free side “I bet that Jotaro is fine and that girl has to do with all the crazy stuffs that are going on right now”

“I guess you are right” Holly mumbled as she looked from one brother to another with a tiny smile on her face “But I can’t help to worry”

“It’s unavoidable for you not to do, he is your child after all” the younger man said as he tried to comfort his sister “But have more faith that everything will be alright”

“Harry is right” Julius agreed as he flashed his two siblings the few smiles that he reserved for them and their family “You raised him after all”
Hearing her brothers’ words brought a strong overwhelming feeling to Holly, getting her eyes to wet with fresh tears before she gave both of them a bone-crushing hug, ripping the air away from their lungs but received a pat on the back from them before they returned the gesture, making her feel complete.

“I know he is a good kid” she commented, flashing a bright to the other two that made them smile as bright in return.

“Oi”

As the sound of Jotaro’s strong voice once again and out of nowhere, the three of them froze, feeling as if they were caught doing something they shouldn’t be doing, the same way they did when they were kids and Rosas found them doing their mischievous pranks.

“Yes?” she asked her son in high pitched tone, a little scared and surprised by his sudden call.

“You look a little pale this morning, are you okay?”

At her son’s question, Holly felt as if fireworks were exploding inside of her, making her feel more complete than before at the display of worry he had just showed for her.

“Yes!” she squealed in happiness as she gave him a peace sign with her fingers “Very well, thank you!”

“I knew it” she told herself with a smile and her hands positioned on her hips while she heard her brothers hi-fiving each other once the shock passed and her son turned back with a huff and resumed his walking.

.

♡

.

After the initial shock for his sudden arrival to the tea room, Jotaro stood in front of a still unconscious Kakyoin Noriko as his grandfather, Joseph, examined the girl as he explained the
situation he had to face some moments ago as his grandmother and Avdol watched.

“This doesn’t look good” the oldest male in the room said as he finished his examination “It’s too late for her, she doesn’t have any salvation”

At his words, the black-haired teen let out a guilty sigh as the same feeling took a hold of him as he looked at the pale face of the girl he had defeat, regretting a bit how violent and rough he had gone with her.

“Jotaro, this isn’t your fault” his grandfather tried to reassure him, locking his serious gaze with his own stoic one “The reason of why this young lady swore loyalty to DIO and came to kill you… It’s right here!”

As he talked, he saw his grandfather move his hands around and towards the baby red hairs that fell on Noriko’s forehead, moving them aside to let him see her naked forehead to find a squirming, disgusting and little bug-like-spider right in the middle of it, making him cringe at the sight.

“What is that?!”

Chapter End Notes

thank you so much for reading, my loves ♡

your love and support is what keeps this story and autor going so make sure to leave your kudos (if you haven't left it) and comments about what do you think (ง'̀-'́;}'

remember, stay safe and keep yourself at home, only go out when necessary ಟ•೭•○

love you a lot and see you next week ♡
DIO's Curse

Chapter Summary

Who would have thought that greed, jealousy and anger could bring a curse to an already cursed bloodline...

Chapter Notes

♡ before reading ♡

HELLO MY DEARS (つ´微笑`)  

another week full of isolation due to the quarantine had passed and it's finally Friday so you already know what that means... JOJO UPDATE ♡

finally finally finally, after so long, we get to see one of the most important chapters for the story, so prepare yourself to see LOTS of hints for future chapters and, maybe, a future part of the series (•・ ○・)■

I don't have to much to say this time so, without any further bother, ENJOY (/♡ ؼ♡)/

See the end of the chapter for more notes

“It’s too late for her, she doesn’t have salvation” Joseph Joestar informed to his grandson right after he finished his examination on the unconscious girl he had brought with himself “She will die in a couple of days…”

At the sound of his grandson’ sigh, he quickly decided to add to take some of the weight on his shoulders “Jotaro, this isn’t your fault” he told him “You see, the reason of why this young lady swore loyalty to DIO and came to kill you… It’s right here!”

The sight of the bug-like-spider that squirmed on the girl’s forehead was disgusting and disturbing, but he tried to keep his cool in front of his grandson, wife and friend Avdol.

“What is that piece of meat-like-spider?” Jotaro asked them as he frowned while looking at the moving flesh with piercing blue-teal eyes “You say that that’s the reason of why she swore loyalty to DIO?”

“It’s a “flesh bud” that’s made from DIO’s cells and it’s connected to her brain” Avdol took the lead in explain the situation to the youngest in the room as Joseph let him explain “That little flesh bud was implanted on her brain to affect her mind”
“In other words, this flesh bud is a type of command that evokes certain emotions…” the grey-haired male interrupted Avdol as he saw his opportunity to chirp in “Charisma! The feelings that leads a soldier to obey a dictator! The feelings that leads a believer to follow the leader of the cult!” he shouted and pointed at the dying redhead girl “This young lady admired DIO and swore loyalty to him!”

Even though she hadn’t said anything and had focused on carefully watching the younger female, Caesia Anthonia Joestar-Zeppeli couldn’t help but feel as if there was something missing in all of this, as if something was quickly slipping out of their hands and something they had to grip as soon as they could before it was too late.

“DIO is a charismatic entity, the main reason of why he can control people with his crushing ability to drag them to him” Joseph continued to explain “That’s how DIO managed to get Kakyoin to come to kill you”

“Remove it” the black-haired teen demanded them, right away as he understood that this girl wasn’t herself or in the right state of mind.

“The brain is a very delicate organ” the oldest continued to explain as he shook his head as he refused to act “If she moves while removing it, we could cause her a lot of damage”

The tiny sounds of discomfort that escaped the unconscious girl called Jotaro’s attention, watching closely as her eyes twitched while the flesh bug squirmed on her forehead.

“Jojo” Avdol called for him and he moved his gaze towards him but not his body since he kept it facing Kakyoin “I’ll tell you about something that happened four months ago… In Cairo, Egypt… I met DIO!”

His words had the younger turning his full attention to him, letting his eye widen in surprise since he wasn’t expecting that information.
Cairo, Egypt, 4 months ago

It was a late night in the quiet and desert streets of Egypt as the full moon shone brightly in the sky when Mohammed Avdol, a fortune-teller, walked around the empty places to get to his little shop in the souk Jan el-Jalili.

As he reached his place, he naturally went up to the second floor of his shop, ready to call it a night, but stood frozen on his steps in the stairs as he came across the image of a tall, buffy and blonde man, who elegantly stood in the top of the stairs as a cold and menacing aura surrounded him while the air around them turned cold.

He was afraid of the evil presence in front of him, as he stared at the floating golden locks, the white skin similar to a ghost and the enigmatic energy that came in waves of the seductive man in front of him, sight that told Avdol that the man in front of him wasn’t anyone else but Dio Brando, the man that Mister Joseph Joestar had warned him about.

“They told me that the abilities you possess can’t be found in ordinary people…” the blonde man spoke with such a silky voice that was designed to lure anyone to his imponent presence “I will be very grateful if you could show them to me…”

His words brought a sense of calmness and more to Avdol, who started to shake and froze in fear as the golden locks in the other’s hair started to grow in length as they shot to him, pulling from the tips a type of fleshy and pointy thing that was trying to get closer to his forehead.

“Come, Avdol…”

As the things opened and revealed a pointy object, Avdol gave a scream and jumped out of the window, giving a flip and dashing to the Egyptian streets to get away as much as he could from his shop and from the man in question, quickly getting up every time he fell, running like he hadn’t done before, keeping buried the fighting instinct that could have flashed on his mind since he knew how dangerous a man like DIO was.

He ran and ran, using the labyrinth that was the souk gave him, putting as much distance as he could place, only stopping when he was sure that the vampire wasn’t following him.

“In any other way, just like this young lady, he would have used his flesh buds to turn me into one of his followers” Avdol concluded with cold sweat on his forehead as he finished his tale, looking
at Noriko, who still lay unconscious on the ground.

“You would have died some years later after your brain was completely rotten…” Joseph supported as he also looked at the young girl, intertwining the fingers of his good hand with his wife’s ones, trying to give her some comfort since she hadn’t talked through all the ordeal… And he was starting to get worried.

“Dead?” Jotaro asked the three of them as he walked to stand beside Kakyoin, making the three of them look back at him in surprise “Hold on, Kakyoin… hasn’t died yet!”

With a stretched arm and a new fire inside of his chest, he called out his Stand, who materialized right away beside him “I’ll remove it with my Stand!”

With gentle hands, he held Noriko’s face in place as he kneeled beside her, keeping her in place so she wouldn’t move in case she woke up while he removed the squirming bug.

But his actions brought shock into the other three, who stood right way to intervene and pull him away.

“Wait, Jotaro!”

“Don’t touch me, Jiji!” he snapped back at his grandfather as his Stand’s hand moved towards the flesh bud “I’ll remove it without damaging her brain!” he told them “My Stand can move with so much precision that he can even catch a bullet”

“Stop it! That flesh bud is alive!” Joseph snapped back at his stubborn grandson “Don’t you understand that there is a reason for the bud to be outside the body?! There is a reason for the best surgeons not being able to remove it!”

But the black-haired teen ignored the older and made his Stand use his purple index and thumb to get a hold of the bud, action that resulted in one of the tentacles that was buried in the redhead’s forehead to stab his own hand.

“Goddamn it!”

“Shit!”
“The flesh bud freed one of his tentacles and stabbed him!” the Egyptian said right after the married couple cursed at the scene, cold sweating once again “This is bad! Leave it, Jojo!”

“It will try to take over the brain of who tries to remove it!” the emerald-green eyed male shouted as the three of them watched as the tentacle that had just stabbed the teen started to make its way into his body, hearing him grunt as the thing moved inside his body.

In that moment, at the sudden feeling of something leaving her forehead, Kakyoin Noriko’s eyes snapped open in shock, staring at the tentacle that connected her brain with Jotaro, following the path the flesh thing had till she looked back at him with only her eyes, since her head was securely held in place by big and calloused hands.

“Y-You…” she rasped out in confusion, staring at both Stand and Stand user with a trembling gaze.

“Don’t move, Kakyoin” Jotaro warned her when he noticed she was awake “If I fail, you can bid goodbye to your brain”

As the teen tugged at the bud, the tentacle that had previously stabbed him traveled further in him, reaching his neck and marking itself in the olive skin of his neck.

“Stop it, Jojo! That thing has reached your face!” Avdol shouted and moved forward to separate the teenager from each other, but stopped when he saw Joseph and Caesia’s outstretched arms in front of him, preventing him from getting closer.

“Wait, Avdol!” Joseph requested his friend as he glued his sight on the black-haired teen “Our grandson is quite the man…” he explained at the questioning look he felt from the other “Even though he has that thing inside his body, he hasn’t lost his cool… Neither he nor his Stand had lost control!”

“He knows what he is doing” Caesia chirped in as she kept watching the scene unfolding in front of them with a proud side smile on her face “He is a Joestar and a Zeppeli after all…”

“He has become stronger from what we expected”

Right after those words left the grey-haired man’s mouth, Jotaro’s Stand removed the bud with a war cry, pulling it out from both Noriko’s head and Jotaro’s body, quickly tying together the
tentacles and pulling it till the base snapped and flew towards the married couple, who called for their Hamon in their hands and karate-chopped the bud.

“Overdrive!” they shouted and coated the disgusting thing with it, watching it as it burned for the energy and disintegrated till it turned into dust.

Once she was freed from the bud and watched it disintegrate, Kakyoin Noriko sat down from where she was previously laying down as she touched her forehead with her delicate and thin fingers, feeling dizzy and confused from the actions the teen she had tried to kill some moments ago had made.

“W-Why…?” she rasped out as she looked at the retreating boy, getting him to stop and look back at her from above his shoulder, making her close her eyes for a brief second before looking back to lock eyes with him.

“Why?” she asked him more firmly, more confident in her words “Why did you risk your life to save me?”

Jotaro stayed quiet for a while and only kept his blue-teal eyes staring into her amethyst ones, showing no emotion on his eyes nor his face, but making her feel as if he was communicating something to her, something she couldn't comprehend quiet yet.

“I don’t know” he simply said as he turned back and started walking outside the room “To be honest… I’m not very sure myself…”

Feeling overwhelm by his boldness in admitting he had saved her but didn’t know why caused some tears to form in Noriko’s eyes as she looked down at her lap, shielding her eyes from the other three in the room with her red bangs, almost in the verge of crying.

“Thank you, Jotaro...”
What none of the present in the room or anyone else knew was that Holly Kujo had heard it all, hidden from their view behind one of the exterior walls of the room, with her eyes closed as she smiled softly due to her child’s words with a first aid kit placed on her hands that she had gone to retrieve to clean the redhead’s wounds.

“Mama knows you well, Jotaro…”

After the respective presentations were brushed aside, Holly Kujo, Jotaro’s mother, proceed to clean and bandage Noriko’s wounds, removing all the blood on her pale face with cottons soaked with alcohol as gently as she could, getting her to wince from time to time for the burning sensation it created on the open wounds when they touched them.

“I finished~” Holly said once she finished tying the bandage around her forehead, making sure that was tight enough for it to not fall but also to not be bothersome.

“Thank you so much, ma’am” Noriko thanked in a whisper, flashing a relieved smile to the kind woman.

“Your name is Kakyoin-chan, isn’t it?” she asked her with a calming smile on her face “You should rest, you can spend the night in here”

The redhead wanted to kindly protest against the idea and reassure the older that she didn’t want to be such a bother than what she had already been, but her words got stuck on her mouth since Jotaro’s mother was quick to look at her father.

“Papa, go prepare her futon”
“Why me?!” Mr. Joestar, Joseph, shouted, clearly annoyed by the request “With how much I hate the idea of sleeping in the floor…” he mumbled as he hit with an open palm the floor beside him to remark his point “Holly! Change the futon on our room for a bed!”

When she felt better and the feeling of dizziness left her, Noriko suspected that the older woman with light blonde hair was Mr. Joestar’s wife, and she felt a little bit better now that he had confirmed it, especially when she looked at the exasperated expression the light blonde woman wore as she heard the sigh she gave as he started to complain.

“Papa, you are in Japan now, so it will be better if you start getting used to the Japanese lifestyle” Holly said with a serious expression on her face as she also hit the ground, imitating her father “By the way, call me Seiko”

“What?!”

“Oh no, here it goes again…” Mr. Joestar’s wife, Caesia, mumbled, face palming herself and hiding her face behind said hand.

“Holly comes from the word “holy” in English, word that comes from the word “seinaru” in Japanese” Holly explained with a smile on her face, clapping her hands together “That’s why all my friends call me Seiko-san”

“What the hell?!” Joseph shouted in rage at his smiling daughter, obviously annoyed by the situation “But Holly is a beautiful name, I picked it!”

“If you don’t call me Seiko, I’ll ignore you”

“Holly!”

“It hurts, Kakyoin-chan?”

The sudden question directed to her caught Noriko unguarded, not knowing what to answer some couple of seconds for the sudden tension that had been lifted in the room, but she recovered fairly quick and was able to answer in a soft voice “I’m okay”
“Holly!”

“Give me a break…” she heard Jotaro mumble which called her attention, looking back in time as he pulled down the brim of his hat and walked out of the room, clearly annoyed by his mother and grandfather’s bickering.

“Okay, Kakyoin-chan, take off your uniform~”

Once again, the sudden voice of Holly directed to her and the request made her cheeks burn and taint in a red shade that was very noticeable thanks to her pale skin, feeling uncomfortable due to the remaining two males in the room “E-Eh?!”

“Come on, hurry up” the blonde encourage her, looking at her mother who got the message and stood up, surprisingly dragging out her husband by holding into the sweater he was wearing, not exchanging any words with him as Avdol followed them while the first one started to protest all the way out.

“Holly!” Joseph shouted once again while he was dragged out, but his complains turned muffled as his wife let go of him and closed the sliding door, flashing Noriko a smile as she closed it.

“Get well soon, Kakyoin-chan”

Once alone with Jotaro’s mother, the young girl looked at her with a timid expression and let her untie the ribbon of her seifuku top, doing the moves she told her to, helping her pull down her clothes till she was only on her underwear, blushing a little and shivering for the air but covering her chest with her arms.

“Are you okay, Kakyoin-chan?” she asked her, making her blink a bit before realizing she might have alerted the other woman for her shivering form.

“Y-Yes, thank you, Holly-san” she quickly answered, rubbing her arms to give herself some warm “It’s just that it’s kinda chilly”

“Oh! How silly of me!” the blonde exclaimed as she covered her mouth and laughed a little, turning half of her body to the side before turning back and handling a piece of cloth to her “Here, you can use this nightgown to wear while I wash your uniform”
“Thank you so much for everything, Holly-san” she said, bowing a little in her seated position since her legs felt so weak and knew that they wouldn’t be able to support her weight “I’m so sorry to cause you and your family any source of problem”

“Don’t worry, dear, you aren’t a bother at all” the older flashed her a smile before helping her in dressing up and to stand, letting her use her as a support “Come, I’ll show you your room, I bet you want to call it a day already”

With a whispered thank you, she let Holly lead her, feeling grateful that she didn’t hold any ill feelings towards her for the whole “I was told to kill your son” deal, collapsing right away into the futon that she could bet it wasn’t placed there by Mr. Joestar.

As the sun rose tall in the sky and the morning breeze moved the trees it passed, Joseph Joestar walked around his daughter’s house, dragging with himself a sleepy Caesia who yawned and rubbed her tired eyes, after successfully managing to get her to agree to spend some quality time together before their kids woke up.

“Holly!” he called loudly as they walked, looking around for their daughter “Hey, Holly!”

“Jojo, shut up…” his wife mumbled with a sleepy tone as she continued to rub her sleep from her eyes “You’ll wake up everyone else…”

“Where are you?!” Joseph ignored her as he kept dragging her with their hands intertwined while he dragged with one foot a towel while he held their grandson’ pants in the free one “Pay attention, these are Jotaro’s pants, where are mine?!”

The grey-haired man stopped and rubbed one of his eyes to keep the sleep at bay “The size is not a problem, but I can’t wear them” he whined as he looked at, what he supposed, their daughter’s room, which was empty “Hey, Holly!”

“Why do you want those pants if you brought more in your luggage?” Caesia asked him, a little more awake than before as she stretched herself, something that reminded him of a cat.
“Because I want those pants” he simply replied, trying to brush and drop the subject as they looked for their daughter.

“You brought more pants, right?” she asked him, catching his clear slip about the fact he hadn’t brought more pants and he refused to brought some in Japan since he knew they wouldn’t fit.

“She said that I had to call her Seiko or she would ignore me…” he mumbled to get out of the situation “No! My daughter’s name is Holly” he denied, walking ahead of his wife as he resumed his search “Holly! Answer me!”

“Mio Dio, dammi pazienza” Caesia mumbled as she sighed and followed after her stupid husband.

Meanwhile the grandparents duo searched for their daughter, Jotaro slid opened the front door of his house, lowering himself down a little since his height made it difficult for him to get out without hitting his head, carefully stepping out of his house and closing his eyes.

“It seems that I’ll finally be able to go to class” he told himself, looking back inside as he waited and didn’t hear his mother’s voice “That’s weird…”

“Take this, a goodbye kiss” he heard his mother’s voice echoing on his mind as he recalled the morning ritual she always did before he left for school.

“That’s how it usually goes…” he told himself before sighing and going back inside, as something on his heart told him to do, looking for his loud mother.
In one of the guess rooms in the Kujo estate, Noriko suddenly woke up at the constant demanding shouts of Mister Joestar for his daughter, blinking away the sleep from her eyes as she slowly and carefully sat down on the futon, wondering why the older male was making all that ruckus.

Meanwhile, Avdol walked around the exterior halls of the house, calmly enjoying the morning and the air that Japan had to offer.

Once he heard his friend’s shouts, he started to also look for Miss Holly outside the house, who seemed to be unresponsive as if she hadn’t listened to her father’s demands (which could be impossible for how loud he was being), but stopped dead on his tracks as he noticed something shining in the floor, finding a single silver spoon laying on the floor, weirding him since, for the little time he had known her, he knew that Holly Kujo wasn’t the kind of person to let something out of place.

With a serious expression on his face at the menacing aura that seemed to be coming from the room that stood beside the fallen spoon, he made his way inside, opening wide the sliding door to find some utensils dropped and spread all over the floor with the fridge’s door completely open.

With a loud squeak, he saw the door slowly opening itself in all its length as it reveal a pale hand, hand that belonged to an unconscious Holly Kujo, who he managed to see when the door was fully open and out of the way.

“Ho…” he mumbled in shock at the scene “Miss Holly! Miss Holly!” he shouted as he rushed to her and kneeled, carefully picking her up to support her on his knees to find what was wrong with her “Miss Holly!”

He quickly found out she was breathing heavily and that she was sweating a bit, so he automatically placed a hand on her forehead to catch her temperature “She has a very high fever…” he pointed out “Is she sick?”

But then, Holly groaned in pain and arched her back as two twin vines with what seemed to be purple flowers and green leaves manifested at each side of her neck as they lightly glowed before disappearing.

“That is… It can’t be!” Avdol exclaimed as he carefully lay her down on the floor and turned her around so her back was facing him, grabbing the collar of her shirt “With your permission…”
When he pulled down her clothes to reveal her back, he didn’t expect to see a bunch of intertwined vines with purple flowers and leaves all over her, watching them move around her back in a pale glow.

“How is this possible?!” he asked himself in shock as he tried to touch it but came with nothing “I can get through it…! It’s a Stand!” he declared in a shout as he looked down at the trembling blonde “Holly could also manifest a Stand!”

[STAND NAME] Hermit Purple

Power: D - Speed: C
Range: D - Durability: A
Precision: D - Growth Potential: E

[STAND MASTER] Joseph Joestar

“Miss Holly also possess a Stand…” Avdol mumbled to himself, not believing it yet as he covered the woman’s back again, turning her around so she was laying down in a more comfortable position as she continued to breath heavily “However, this fever… It must be the Stand’s doing”

“We thought that only Jojo and Mister Joestar were the only ones that will suffer the effects of Lady Joestar and DIO’s return and that Holly would be safe…” he told himself as he arranged the blonde so she could properly breathe “No, we only hoped that she would be safe, it was impossible that there wasn’t any reaction…”

“Anyone with blood of the Joestar family had to be affected by DIO, but…!” he stopped for a second “Stands respond to the physical strength of each person, and they move according to their battle instincts…” and he believing in that fact “Holly is very kind and peaceful, it’s impossible for her to resist to DIO’s curse, she doesn’t possess the strength to control her Stand!”
“That’s why her Stand is moving in a negative way, acting against her and hurting her!” he concluded as he watched more parts of the vines manifesting themselves at each side of her neck. “This is bad… At this rate… She will die! She will be murdered!”

Suddenly, he felt an intense bunch of presences from the door frame, making him gasp and look back in said direction, finding not only both Jotaro and Mister Joestar, but also Miss Joestar, Julius and Harry, who looked at the scene with faces full of seriousness, shock, fear and worry.

“A Stand…” the oldest of the family mumbled, staring at his trembling daughter before he also started to shake in fear and despair “Holly…”

Meanwhile Jotaro’s face was unreadable as he hide behind his hat, he tched, the only sign of his current emotions before he was roughly grabbed by the collar of his coat and screamed right into the face by his grandfather, letting the old man slam him into the nearest wall as he continued to let out his current emotions.

As for Caesia, she raised a shaky fist to her mouth to have something to bite and calm her anxiety, closing her eyes to hide the tears that were close to slip from her eyes as one of her eyebrows twitched.

As for Harry and Julius, the youngest of the two had grabbed a handful of the oldest sleeping shirt, putting all his strength on his hold as he trembled and hid his face in the crook of his brother’ neck as the latter put all his strength on a fist that trembled from both his own emotions and the force it was clenched.

“What I feared the most had just happen…” Joseph choked out as he shook and let his forehead rest on his grandson’ chest “My daughter finally possess a Stand…” and added as his grip on Jotaro’s collar twitched “I suspected that she wouldn’t have the power to support it… I suspected that she wouldn’t be able to resist DIO’s curse…”

But then, Jotaro grabbed one of his grandfather’s wrists and held it tight till he dragged it away from him, making eye contact with the older, pushing him away from him in the process “Is there any cure?!”

They all stayed quiet for a second that felt like an eternity for the black-haired boy as he waited for someone to answer him.

“Only one…” Joseph started before looking at the younger and stare right into his blue-teal eyes “We have to find DIO!” he revealed “We have to get rid of DIO to get rid of the curse! We don’t have any other option!”
After calming down as much as they could, the family plus Avdol had managed to take Holly towards her room and lay her down on her futon, pulling a wet handkerchief on her forehead to cool her down a bit and wrapping her with her bedsheets, taking turns in keeping an eye on her as the ones that still had their pajamas showered and changed, reuniting on her room to keep keeping an eye on her and share all they had.

“Even though, I have tried countless of times, he hides and hides her in the dark…” Joseph informed the rest as they looked at all the pictures he had taken of his grandparents, most of them being ones had visible bits of long curly locks, a naked feminine back, a star-shaped-birthmark and the burning stare of sharp red eyes and golden locks.

“No matter how many spiritual pictures I take, the background is always dark” he explained as he squirted his eyes to try and see what was going on “We can’t know where they are with the help of my pictures”

“We have been trying countless of times, but it’s impossible to analyze it with this darkness” Avdol commented as he picked up one of the pictures and looked at it, squirting his eyes to see if he could catch something they could have missed.

“You should have told me from the start” Jotaro told the two as he pushed himself away from the wall he was leaning in and approached them, stretching a hand for the picture Avdol held, who quickly passed it to him “It’s probably that I can find something in that dark place or whatever”

With confidence, he summoned his warrior Stand that quickly came from his back and grabbed the picture, watching as his blue and piercing eyes watched very closely at a determinate place in the darkness.

“You found something, didn’t you?” he asked it before walking towards his mother’s nightstand and pulling out a little notebook and pencil “My Stand can move with so much precision that could remove the flesh bud and so much ability that could stop a bullet” he informed them “I’ll make him draw”

The black-haired teen held high the little notebook as he handed the pencil to his purple Stand,
who immediately took off and started to sketch what he had seen with sharp and quick moves as he held on his free hand the picture that was at the other side of his body.

Then, with final moves, his Stand finished the draw, revealing something that caught them all by surprise.

“A fly?! That’s what he saw?!” Avdol incredulously asked once he saw it as the younger let him see the sketch.

“But a fly it’s no use for us” Joseph complained with crossed arms over his chest.

“Wait!” the Egyptian male told them “I recognize that kind of fly!”

“What?!“

“Jojo, do you have an encyclopedia?”

“We have a library in the other building” the teen answered right away, catching very quick what the other man wanted.

“I’ll look for a paper to take notes” he informed them before leaving “I’ll go to investigate”

Once the family was by themselves, they were submerged in deep thoughts.

Even when the only ones that did all the talking were Jotaro and Joseph, Caesia, Julius and Harry were worried about Holly, sitting around her futon as they waited for her to wake up and see how she was doing, with the former caressing her daughter’s head to give herself some type of comfort that her daughter was going to be fine.

Surprisingly, they heard her stir on her sleeping, watching her as she blinked and looked at them, looking paler than before.

“Holly!” Joseph shouted in surprisingly soft voice as he kneeled beside her and smiled softly at her to reassure her that everything was fine.

“Papa, Mama, I-“
“Rest” he interrupted her to not make her effort herself beyond necessary since it was the last thing they wanted right now, and turned to the youngest in the room “Jotaro, bring some water”

Said teen only raised a hand and walked out of the room, walking towards the kitchen to fetch a glass of water, unaware of the cherry redhead that stood beside a wall she had previously used to hide, accidently eavesdropping the whole conversation.

Curious by nature, Noriko, who had the main intention to thank Miss Holly for letting her stay and Jotaro for saving her, decided to follow Avdol and see what he was doing and if he needed help since she felt a deep sense of debt to them even for all they had done for her without knowing her or having meet her before.

As silent as she could be, she walked towards the building that she could tell that was the library, stopping at the door frame and looked back at the Egyptian, admiring the little flame that stood above him close enough to illuminate the encyclopedia he was reading.

“You look better” he told her, catching her by surprise and getting her to make a sound of surprise on her throat “I’m sorry, but I’m a little busy”

“Is it true that your own Stand can kill you?” she asked him instead of feeling offended by brushing her aside, understanding that the situation was very delicate.

“Yes, I have seen people suffer this destiny in the past”

His words had her gasping in horror as a sudden knot formed on her stomach.

“At the moment, it’s only on her back, but at any other moment, that Stand that looks like vines will eventually wrap all of her body” he explained with a serious frown “She will experience high fevers and other sickness, she will fall into comma to never wake up again… And then, she will die…”
The knot on her stomach turned tighter as the other one that had formed on her throat, feeling a rush of anger at fate for being so cruel with Miss Holly, who had been nothing but sweet with her.

“In mortal eyes, she will die by something strange and invisible that no doctor would be able to treat” Avdol trailed on as he closed the book “No one, nor you nor me, can do something about it”

Sadness embarked her and made her look down, feeling mute at not knowing what to do or say.

“But there is still hope” his words got her looking up at him, determination shining on her eyes “It will take her fifty days to reach that state” he informed as he looked for more information in another book “We have to find and defeat DIO before that happens” he revealed “If we manage to destroy the link coming from DIO’s Stand, we can save her”

“Thank you, Jotaro…” Holly thanked her son right after she finished drinking the glass of water he brought her, smiling at him and the rest to avoid worrying them “I wonder what happened to me” she said as she laughed a bit to lift the tension in the room “I can’t believe that a fever had made me lose consciousness… But I feel better now”

“Since it’s on her back, she hasn’t noticed what is going on” Jotaro told himself as he saw some parts of his mother’s Stand that manifested themselves at each side of her neck, weak but present on her.

“You did scare us, Holly” Joseph told her, trying to keep at bay his worry from showing on his face as he sat with Caesia on the floor “Now that you woke up, it’s time to brush your teeth”

At that, he pulled out a bit of toothpaste on her toothbrush and went to her, kneeling beside her and offering the toothbrush to her “Open your mouth” he demanded her, which the blonde did with a happy grin on her face “Now I’ll wash your face” he said after finishing his first task, cleaning her pale face with a wet towel.

“But how disheveled you are” he commented as he brushed her hair like the old times when she was just a little girl.

“Now, I’ll take care of your nails” and he cut them before peeling an apple one his sons passed him “Open…”
Once he finished with the important matters, the older male moved to her legs, cleaning them with a wet towel to finish his task.

Watching this and wanting to cheer up the sudden situation they had gotten into for her, an idea crossed her mind and she decided to tag alone to light up the mood.

“Papa, help me change my underwear” she said as she held up a pair of knickers, laughed at the flushed and shocked faces of her father and brothers, who looked like they didn’t know where to look or what to do “Just kidding, just kidding!”

“Gosh, don’t do that!” Julius said to his sister as he rubbed the back of his neck, his pale skin making more visible his embarrassment “It’s embarrassing to be caught unguarded...”

“Yeah!” Harry agreed as he also rubbed his neck and tried to keep his cool as much as he could with a pout on his face “You made me lose my cool...”

"As if you had one" the blonde male said, earning himself a punch that he returned, creating a fight between the two Joestar siblings.

“That’s my daughter for you” Caesia proudly said as she smiled at her firstborn with pride, the first one she had managed to make through all the morning.

“Well, what do you want to eat, Jotaro?” Holly asked as she started to move to stand up and resume her duties in the house, action that caused all of them to almost dash to her to stop her and keep her on her futon.

“Hey…”

“Don’t move! Lay down!” Jotaro snapped at her, surprising the rest by his sudden outburst, who looked back at him with wide eyes, so he composed himself when he saw his mother’ Stand manifest once again, this time clearer than before “I mean, you should do nothing till the fevers goes down” he excused, grabbing the brim of his hat to pull it down, shielding his eyes and covering his face from the rest as he turned to give them his back “Get better soon”

“Holly, come on…”
“It’s true” the blonde agreed and laughed a bit, smiling at her father as she laid down as he covered her with the sheets “You are very kind to me when I get sick” she commented as she grabbed the edge of the sheets and looked at each member of her family till her eyes fell on her child’s form “Catching a cold from time to time isn’t that bad…”

She just finished saying those words and immediately fell unconscious, the Stand getting the best of her and alerting the rest.

“Ho-Holly!” Joseph shouted as he got closer to her, looking and feeling helpless more than before.

“She passed out again…” Caesia commented as she caressed Holly’s blonde strand with a look of emptiness on her face.

“She showed herself cheerful, but she had a very high fever…” Joseph’s voice was strangled as he talked, the ultimate proof of how Holly’s sickness was affecting him “I could confirm it by her way of acting, even when she didn’t tell us, she was aware of the Stand, in fact, she didn’t want us to see it” he continued as his eyes burned with tears “She didn’t want us to worry! That’s just how my daughter is!”

The silence returned to them as they felt completely helpless, specially the four Hamon user that felt as if they were hit in the gut by something, feeling fate mocking them for having the ability to heal but not being able to use their power to save or heal her.

“Old Man, are you sure we can’t try to heal her with Hamon?” Julius’s strangled voice broke the silence, as his blue eyes were glued to his sister’ form.

“Yes” Joseph answered with difficulty “The Stand is similar to mine, resembling vines” he explained “I fear that it will spread easily if you add it to the mix”

“So that means that there is nothing we can’t do?” Harry asked with an empty tone, his expression showing how devastated he felt for not being able to heal his big sister and for feeling Julius's frustration.

“No” Caesia interrupted as she stood to look at her younger children, her green eyes showing all her repressed fury at the responsible of all this mess and more emotions swimming on them as her Hamon started to react due to her anger “As your father said, there is only one option left…”
Meanwhile, Jotaro tightened and put more strength that necessary on his fist, making it trembled for how tight it was, keeping his emotions at bay to not alert neither his grandparents nor uncles since their main focus had to be his mother.

“Mister Joestar! I found it!” Avdol interrupted the newly formed silence in the room, making all of them turn back to him in surprise and relief.

Sensing the family distress, the newcomer was quick to move towards the table in the room and let the encyclopedia fall in it, opening the book in all its length in the right page and signaled his discovery “This one!”

The fly Jotaro’s Stand found was nothing else but the **Ue Ue Fly**, a fly that could only be found in the Nile river’s basin, with the ones with strips on their legs as **Aswan’s Ue Ue**.

“Egypt?!” Joseph shouted as he noticed the location.

“We have reduced our search to the neighborhoods of Aswan” Avdol pointed out, trying to give a positive note “That’s where DIO is!”

“So it was Egypt all this long…” a feminine voice interrupted their conversation, surprising them and making them look at the source of the voice, finding a certain redhead girl standing behind Jotaro.

“Kakyoin…” the black-haired teen mumbled as he turned to look at Noriko, surprised to see her standing there.

“What do you mean?” Joseph intervened, cutting whatever his grandson was about to say or wanted to say as he looked at the girl with a demanding tone.

“They implanted the flesh bud on my brain three months ago” she explained with a serious expression on her face “When I went to Egypt with my family for vacations, I crossed paths with DIO”

“You were in Egypt…” Avdol mumbled, letting the way of the redhead’s words sink in before he returned to look back at the book as a theory formed on his mind “It seems that DIO doesn’t want to leave Egypt for a reason”
“When are you leaving?” Noriko asked them as she stepped inside the room, her socked feet making contact with the room’s floor “I’ll go with you”

“Do you want to join us?” Jotaro finally asked her, curious and confused to why she wanted to do such a thing “Why?”

“To be honest…” she said with a smile, looking down at the ground before looking at him with soft violet eyes “I don’t know where it comes from this desire to join you”

At this, he tsk as he looked away from their eye contact, she raised a finger and touched her bandaged forehead “I became myself once again thanks to you” she told him with honestly “That’s all…”

The other two males didn’t object or refused, just closed their eyes and accept it, knowing that they would need all the help they could gather.

Since there wasn’t any objection, Joseph stood from his position and went back to his daughter, kneeling beside her and smiling softly at her, even when she was unconscious.

“Holly… We will save you no matter what, don’t worry” he promised her the same way he used to do when she was a child and wanted him to promise her and her brothers not to tell their mother about their adventures and pranks whenever they used their Hamon.

“There isn’t nothing to worry about… We will heal you…” he bite back the tears that wanted to leave his eyes as he cupped her cheek, reassuring himself that she was going to be okay “Everything will be okay…”

“Jojo’s mother is a woman that can calm other people” Noriko commented as she walked to Avdol and stood beside him, not moving her violet eyes from the older woman “Having her close gave me serenity” she admitted as she raised a hand at what she was going to say and blushed a little “It might sound weird, but if I fall in love with someone, I wish it is with someone like her”

She let out a relieved sigh when no one in the room commented about her slip, watching as the blonde and brunet males that she hadn’t meet yet smiled at her with understanding “I want to protect her” she continued to confess “I want to see her happy and kind smile once again…”

“That’s our big sister’s magic” Harry told the redhead with a smile as he looked fondly at his sister “She can make you feel incredible with just only seeing her smile”

“If she is proud and smiles at you, you feel like you don’t know nor cared about anyone else
opinion since she is enough to make you feel like the best person in the world” Julius explained, showing, alongside his brother, how much they loved and appreciate her.

“There is no time left, we part immediately” Joseph told them with a hard stare, standing up quickly and walking out of the room “I’ll do only some calls”

“I’ll go with you” Caesia told him as she also stood and went to her husband, but stopped in front of her two sons “Make sure to take care of her, that’s an order” she told them before looking at her grandson “And you, Jojo, go packing only the necessary” and then, she turned at the other two added members to their group “Knowing Joseph, he will want us to go right now, so better get going”

And then, she left fast, rushing out as she looked for her husband.

Nodding their heads, Jotaro, Avdol and Noriko left, going to do as the older woman had said, with the last two waving goodbye to the siblings as they sat close to their sister.

“Don’t worry big sis, Julius and I will take care of you” Harry told the blonde as he petted her head, the same way she did with him when they were younger and she praised him for their little adventures.

“More like I, Julius, will take care of the both of you” Julius snorted, earning himself a slap in the arm by the younger sibling.

After getting ready, Jotaro and Noriko stood outside the Kujo estate, watching as large black cars stopped in the gate and lots of males came out from them and went inside the big house without any exchange of words, leaving the teens a little clueless.

“They are doctors from the Speedwagon Foundation, we can trust them” Joseph explained the two as he exited the house, carrying a suitcase and his hat, being followed by Caesia and Avdol, who carried their respective luggage “They will take care of her the twenty-four hours of the day”
“As a plus, Harry and Julius will be there for her, taking care of her health and informing us if anything happens” the light blonde said as she pulled out her sunglasses and stood beside her husband, ready and eager to go.

Then, Avdol walked towards the black-haired teen “Jojo, like the fortune teller I am, I will name your Stand before we depart”

“A name?” Jotaro asked, a little confused by his words.

“The cards of destiny: The Tarot” he said, raising his hand full of the cards “It’s as simple as picking a card randomly” he explained with a side smirk “It will give me a clue about your destiny and also the power of your Stand”

As Avdol offered him the cards, Jotaro removed half of the top and picked out the first one that was left, showing it to the other with his usual neutral and stoic expression.

“The Star! The Star card!” Avdol shouted with excitement “Your Stand will be known as… Star Platinum!”

Name: Kujo Jotaro.

Stand name: Star Platinum.

Powers: Extremely precise movements and splendid force.

Name: Kakyoin Noriko.

Stand name: Hierophant Green.

Powers: Long distance manipulation and Emerald Splash.

Name: Joseph Joestar.
Stand name: Hermit Purple.

Powers: Spiritual photos.

Name: Caesia Anthonia Zeppeli.

Stand name: ???

Powers: Hamon concentrated in bubbles.

Name: Mohammed Avdol.

Stand name: Magician’s Red.

Powers: Infernal heat.

“Very well, we are leaving!” Joseph stated as they turned and the five of them gave the first step towards their path “Let’s hit the road!”

Meanwhile, somewhere in the vast Egyptian country, a woman wearing a Victorian dress, with sun-kissed skin, dark and empty blue eyes and long black-haired hair with curls stood in front of a table with her back pressed to a muscular, hard and pale chest that belonged to a shirtless blonde man, who also had his hands holding her hips in place as he kissed her soft and delicate neck.

“Come on, my love” he whispered on her ear as he reached it, nibbling at it and playing with it as he looked at the camera in the table “Show me that useful Stand of yours…”

Like a puppet following its master’s orders, Johanna Joestar raised a hand and quickly drag it
down, slamming it down in the camera as purple vines shot from her, sending shocks of energy that resulted in a dark picture that was quickly picked up by DIO, who held it up so they both could see it.

“Just like I suspected…” he said to his servants that were hidden in the darkness as he watched the sleeping form of Joseph Joestar and Jotaro Kujo, his wife’s descendants that started to appear there “They know where we are” something that didn’t set in him well “Would they come to Egypt?”

Being honest with himself, DIO knew, since his awakening and returning Johanna Joestar back to life at the cost of her soul, that sooner or later, they would come to hunt him down and rip him away from her, something he had been preparing himself and he was more than ready to end them all.

“Joseph and Jotaro…”

Gasping for air, Joseph removed his hat from his face with wide eyes, breathing heavily as he shook off the menacing energy that came to him as a slap to his face.

“He saw us” he informed his grandson, looking back at him since he was sat behind him and Caesia, close to Noriko “I could feel him watching us…”

“Yes” Jotaro agreed as he also felt a pair of eyes and a menacing presence at the back of his neck, even when he was sure no one was watching him.

“Be careful” the older warned as he looked around, trying to find anything weird as his wife and grandson did the same “The next Stand user could be in this very same place”

In the further row of seats, a certain bug was doing its buzzing sound as it flew around with a single objective on its mind.
thank you so much for reading (ﾉ▽beeld)/
hope you had liked this chapter and the previous ones ♡

if you did, please, don't forget to leave a comment about your opinions/theories/etc and kudos to let me know if you want me to keep going (つω‘c)

don't forget that I love you all so make sure to follow the rules your local authorities had said and stay safe (●●・○・●●♡)

see you next Friday (つω‘c)
Tower of Gray

Chapter Summary

The first enemy has entered.

Chapter Notes

♡ before reading ♡

HI HI HI HI ♡

JOJO Friday is back and ready to make you all excited (つopherc)
I know I'm kinda late in the update of the day, but what counts is that the update is here and you will be able to read it (・・□・)　　

also, I apologize if I didn't answer to the last comments but I hadn't had the motivation to neither write nor answer to your comments but I will try to answer them (／ω／)／

hope you had had a great week and a good weekend so, without more chachacha, ENJOY (／ω／)／

See the end of the chapter for more notes

“There is an emotion called fear” an old and raspy said inside the large and dark mansion “This presents itself in a natural way in all animals”

The voice belonged to an old and small woman, who stood in front of her Lord “What triggers fear?” she asked before she laughed at her own question “Fear is caused by natural instincts and other that is born like a result of the thoughts”

The blonde man didn’t answer her, he simply turned his body and made a gesture for one of the females on his bed to come to him, bathing in the lust and desire her body emitted, one that he could breathe due to his sensible nose.

“For example, when you find something bigger than you and you realize that you can’t face it” the old woman continued her explanation, not caring about what was happening around her “Or when you find something unknown… Something so simple like uncertainty can make you feel fear”

“When you fear, different alternatives present themselves to you” she added as she saw the blonde drop the dead body of the woman he had called to the floor, discarding her as if she was nothing “Fight, resist, escape or accept your destiny…” at that, she paused for a bit before a wicked smile started to appear on her wrinkled face “However, crossing paths with Lord DIO provokes something different… Joy!”
“How does people act after finding joy in fear?” DIO asked her with a smirk on his face, hiding an unsaid question behind his words to test her.

“He is already inside the same plane as Joestar and the rest” she informed him as she gripped her can “They won’t reach their destination safely…”

Meanwhile, in another room inside the creepy mansion, the empty vessel of Johanna Joestar softly rocked a bundle of blankets, softly humming a lullaby as her empty and void blue eyes stared out of the window, a worried frown installed on her delicate face as she felt a shiver running down her spine and a sharp pain on her shoulder, right where her star-shaped-birthmark lay.

After voicing their concerns to the rest, the whole plane submerged itself into silence while the rest of the passengers slept, unaware of the danger that roamed around them, while the Joestar group stayed awake to look for the threating Stand user.

Noriko, who had closed her eyes for a moment to give the impression she was sleeping, resting one cheek on one of her fists, opened her violet eyes to lock gazes with Jotaro as a buzzing sound reached her ears, silently asking him with her eyes if he had heard it too, finding the same question on his teal-blue eyes before he broke the moment and looked around, giving her the opportunity to do the same thing.

They easily found the source of the noise as they looked right into the farthest row of seats, finding a bug that flew around in a fast speed, making Jotaro stand up from his seat to see it better since it was getting harder to see from their place without squinting his eyes.

“It’s a rhinoceros beetle…” he mumbled at first, trying to guess what type of bug it was, but the gave a better look at the insect “No… It’s a stag-beetle!”

“A vdol, is it a Stand user?” Joseph seriously asked his friend as he looked at him from above the row of seats “We found a Stand user already?”

“It’s very possible” Avdol confirmed as his eyes never left the sight of the insect “It could be a Stand user in the shape of an insect…”
“DIO doesn’t waste his time” Caesia mumbled to herself as they carefully stared back at the insect that, in a blink of the eye, disappeared while the buzzing sound stopped.

“It hide itself between the seats…” Joseph commented, knowing which route the Stand user had been.

“Where is it?” Avdol asked out loud as he tried to find the bug while Jotaro stepped out of his seat and to the little hall, looking out for their enemy so he could get rid of it.

The redhead teen, still seated on her place, suddenly heard a sharp sound that it she knew that belonged to the beetle, making her look back at the source with a quick move of her head as her sharp eyes stared at the bug that had suddenly appeared beside Jotaro’s head.

“Jojo! You have it beside your head!” she warned him quickly, warning that he took into account and moved a bit so he was face to face with it, letting it trapped between the five of them.

“It’s big, it must be a Stand…” she confirmed in a breathless voice as the beetle’s mouth started to leak a yellow and disgusting substance as something moved inside of it, movement that made realization slap right into her face “That insect is a Stand!”

“It’s disgusting… but I will take care of it” Jotaro told them with his usual emotionless voice, facing the beetle as he raised his arms, ready to call out for his Stand so they could all go back to sleep and continue their trip.

“Be careful” Avdol warned him as he and the rest watched “I heard about someone with a Stand with the shape of insect that enjoys ripping tongues”

“Star Platinum!” the black-haired teen called out for his Stand, manifesting him from his stretched arm and willing him to hit the bug, but it was faster and moved before Star Platinum could hurt it, shocking the rest since they had seen the abilities and speed of the warrior Stand.

“It avoided it!” the Egyptian shouted in a shocked tone of voice, staring at the scene with wide eyes “Incredible! It possess faster and more precise moves than Star Platinum!”

“There is no doubt, that bug is the Stand!” the redhead confirmed with an agitated voice as she looked around, looking for the user “Where is it?! Where is it hiding?! Where is his Stand user?!”
But then, the bug started to let out a green substance from his mouth as a long mouth came from his insides, which alarmed her and made her stop her chaotic wondering “It’s going to attack!”

As Noriko shouted, the bug stretched its second mouth towards Jotaro, who quickly used his Stand hand to avoid the hit, raising one hand and opening his mouth when he cried out a strong “ORA”, but was short lived as the stretched tongue pierced the purple hand and grabbed Star Platinum’s teeth.

“No!”

“Jotaro!”

“Jojo!”

With blood on his hand and mouth, Jotaro choked out as he tried and put all his strength in avoiding the mouth with Star Platinum’s teeth from going deeper in their mouths, Stand that was also bleeding out from where he was hit.

“I’m glad that he had been able to stop the attack with his teeth but…” Joseph started to say from the sidelines, not moving his eyes from his grandson.

“The fact that it has tried to rip Star Platinum’s tongue… It’s him!” Avdol shouted in realization as he carefully stared at the bug “The Tower card… His Stand represents destruction, calamity and interrupted trips… Tower of Gray!” he revealed to the rest as the pieces fell into place.

“Tower of Gray commits mass murders and makes them look like accidents” he explained with a frown on his face “It’s suspected that he was the responsible of the air crash that killed three-hundred people in England” he also added “It’s rumored that he works for DIO!”

Once he received enough information, Jotaro let out a cry similar to his Stand one, letting him start throwing punches around so they could reach Tower of Gray, also crying out multiples “ORA”s in the process.

Sadly, the bug was smart and faster than Star Platinum’s hits, avoiding each of them with such precision that allowed it stand in front of them without any damage on it.

“It avoid them” the Egyptian pointed out once again “It didn’t only surpass the speed of the attack from one hand but from two… How much speed!”
At that, a disturbing laugh started to come out of the bug as it kept moving his wings to stay up and stand in front of them “Even if you shot ten times at a one centimeter of distance, my Stand would avoid each one of the bullets!” it cockily bragged with the same disturbing voice “But well, Stands are immune to bullets…”

“*He has to be close!*” Joseph told himself as roamed his gaze around, looking for the enemy user “*Who controls that Stand? Which one of the passenger could be?*” he continued to ask himself as he kept searching “*If we could only find him…*”

As quick as it came, the bug had quickly disappeared in a blink of the eye right in front of Jotaro, who only made him widen his eyes in surprise as he stared at the empty air in front of him.

“*It disappeared again*” he told himself as he moved to look for it, guiding himself by the sound.

“It’s over there!” Noriko’s shout had him quickly turning at her and then looking at where she was looking as well as the rest of his companions, watching as the bug appeared and lowered itself behind the seat of a random man.

“What is he trying to do?” he asked himself once again, trying to guest the next move of it.

With a monstrous calculation, Tower of Gray went through another row of seats where it had previously descended behind, opening a hole and going through it, with consequently makes him go through the males sitting there, males that choked out as they bled and died for their tongues being ripped out of their confines, action that made the Stand laugh evilly.
“Bingo! I have their tongues!” it celebrated in a mocking tone as its extra mouth held the three tongues “And now, I’ll commit a…”

In all its disgusting fashion, they watched as the bug flew towards a wall, smashing the three tongues in it as it started to write something with the blood of its victims, the sickening sound of flesh slapping made it unbearable at first it quickly stopped once the Stand moved aside and revealed the word “Massacre”.

“How dare he?!” Noriko shouted in disgust and anger by the disrespectful manners of the Stand.

“I’ll burn you!” Avdol promised with anger for the disrespectful act as he stared back at the Stand with hate “Magician’s Red!”

The bird-human Stand comes out to life with a cry of its own, flames surrounding half of its body as usual as his user prepared himself to fight, increasing the temperature inside the plane.

“Don’t lose your cool, Avdol!” the redhead snapped at the man behind her, getting him to raise his arms in defeat and withdrew his Stand, more than aware of the risk he was putting them by acting recklessly.

Noriko’s shout was out in time as an older man groaned on his sleep, rubbed his face as he woke up, stretching himself in the process “How noisy… What is going on?” they heard the man ask as he rubbed one of his eyes and looked at them, right when the beetle Stand got close to him.

“Be careful!” the girl shouted in alarm to warn the man, but he just ignored her as he pay no attention to the flying insect.

“I think I’ll go to the bathroom…” the old man commented as he stood from his seat and walked to the place he had voiced, supporting his weight in the bloody wall from where Tower of Gray had painted the disturbing words, withdrawing it back when he touched the bloody liquid “What is this sticky thing…?!” he asked as he tested it on his fingers before moving it to his nose, taking some sniffs of it before he screams in horror “Is that blood?!”

Standing behind him as he backed away from the bloody wall, Noriko lifted one hand and quickly dragged it down to hit the back of the man’s neck, letting a sigh leave her mouth as she said “Atemi”
As quick the hit came, the man fell to his chest in a quick motion, totally unconscious, something that got her companions looking at her in somewhat of disbelief.

“I couldn’t allow him to spread panic on the other passengers” she explained her reasons before looking at her companions with sharp but sparkling amethyst eyes “Avdol, a Stand like *Magician’s Red* could cause this plane to explode” with that, she turned to Jotaro so she could emphasize her thoughts of his actions “And Jojo, if one of your hits managed to create a hole fuselage, that would have been catastrophic…” and with that said, she returned to look back at all of them “My Stand, Hierophant Green, it's the most proper for this situation” she informed before giving a sharp turn to stare right back to the beetle that had reappeared and stood in front of her.

“So Kakyoin Noriko, eh?” Tower of Gray cockily asked her as he stared back at her “Lord DIO told me about you…”

His words sent an unconscious shiver down her spine, but she put all her effort in shielding it from her companions as her sight didn't faltered from the enemy Stand.

“Stop it, a passive Stand like yours has no chance against mine” it commanded her again, sounding too confident for someone on its situation “You won’t catch me with your speed”

“That’s what do you think?” she calmly asked him as she called out her Stand, willing it to start creating the green substance it needs for its attack “*EMERALD SPLASH!*”

Like before when she fought Jotaro, different emerald projectiles shot out of the liquid Hierophant Green had created, aiming them to the bug that easily deflected them, rounding them with the same speed it had used to avoid Star Platinum’s hits.

“*EMERALD SPLASH!*” she shouted once again with frown on her face, shooting more emerald towards the bug, who rounded them once again as it laughed.

“Do you think that you will manage to catch me if you keep shooting so many projectiles?” Tower of Gray asked with its disturbing voice, mocking her as he drew dangerously close to her “You haven’t hit not even once!”

In a blink of the eye, the enemy Stand stood in front of Hierophant Green, more than ready to
attack at any moment, something that had Noriko letting shocked and choked sound from her throat that had Avdol shouting from the side “This is bad! It could avoid them with its speed!”

As predicted, Tower of Gray’s second mouth shot out and slammed against Hierophant Green’s mouth mask, breaking it and making both Stand and Stand user spit blood, forcing them both to fall to the ground as Noriko choked out and gasped for air, hitting the ground hard with her chest as her legs failed her.

“Kakyoin!” Jotaro called for the girl in alarm as he saw her fall while the rest of the group gasped in alarm.

“My sped is in another level!” the bug bragged as it laughed at the fallen female, who shakily used her elbows to support herself while blood came from the corners of her mouth, coming to a stop in front of her face “You will never catch me…” it bragged again “Kakyoin…” it called for her as it moved his extra mouth around as saliva came from the main one “I have the intention to rip your tongue in my next movement… Tower Needle!”

With determination, the redhead stared back with anger at the annoying and noisy Stand, willing her own to attack once again “EMERALD SPLASH!”

“Don’t you understand?!” Tower of Gray asked her again, moving around each emerald that was aimed to it.

“We are in trouble!” Avdol informed the rest with alarm as they watched the scene unfolding at the other side, feeling hopeless for not being able to help her “It managed to avoid Emerald Splash again!”
“If I manage to rip your tongue, you will go mad from agony!” Tower of Gray shouted as it charged towards Noriko “How exquisite!”

“What? You say that you will rip my tongue?” she asked in a calm tone of voice, sitting on the floor as her amethyst eyes didn’t leave the other Stand as it shot its attack “My Hierophant Green…”

At her words, Hierophant Green appendages shot out from different seats towards the enemy Stand, piercing it in different places and holding it still, getting it to screech in pain “WHAT?!”

“Will go mad from joy when it tears you apart!” she stated with satisfaction as the enemy Stand continued to screech in pain “Hierophant Green expanded its extremities while you weren’t paying attention” she explained as she stood on her shaky legs “You didn’t notice that I directed you to this place with my Emerald Splash?”

Loyal to her will, Hierophant Green’s appendages dug deeper into the bug, tearing it apart till it exploded in pieces of flesh, getting the man that she had previously knocked unconscious to wake up screaming, pulling out his tongue where a beetle tattoo became visible before it was ripped in half as blood came out from his head, falling unconscious and, possibly, dead.

“So that old man was the Stand user?” Noriko asked as she approached the other, closing her eyes for a bit before she open one of them “Repulsive Stands tend to have repulsive users”

As she came to stand close to Jotaro, he simply offered her a handkerchief that she gladly took, flashing him a little smile and an almost whispered “Thank you” before she whipped away the blood on the corners of her mouth before the red liquid dried and turned difficult to whip, kindly rejecting Caesia’s offer to heal the wound, saying that it wasn’t that grave and that it will heal fast.

Without hesitation, they managed to pull up the dead man and seat him in one of the seats close to them, dropping a white blanket over him to hide the body so they could avoid freaking out the rest of the passengers.
“He didn’t have DIO’s flesh bud on his forehead…” Noriko commented as she twirled her curly bang, deep in thought and not noticing Jotaro looking at her by the corner of his eye.

“Tower of Gray already was a malefic Stand that, for money, murdered tourist in such a way that managed to make them look like an accident” Avdol explained to them to clarify the lack of a flesh bug on him “Most likely… DIO managed to convince him with little money”

Before they could add something to the conversation, both Joseph and Caesia noticed a sudden shift on the plane, as if it had tilted to one side, making them share a look before the youngest of the two looked at an empty coffee cup that fell to the ground.

“That’s weird…” he said, turning to look back at the rest “It might be my imagination, but I think that the plane is a little tilted…”

They waited a few seconds and watched as the cup that had previously fallen round in the ground, leaving no room to neither Joseph nor Caesia that their suspicion wasn’t correct.

“I don’t think that it was only your imagination, Jojo…” the blonde confirmed their suspicions to her husband, looking at him after confirming it.

“There is no doubt” he agreed as cold sweat fell on his forehead before he dashed out towards the front of the plane “It won’t be that…?!?”

Leaving no room for discussion, Caesia followed him, knowing very well to trust him in these kind of things than not, leaving Jotaro, Noriko and Avdol to stare at each other in confusion at the couple’s reaction.

Due to the tilting, Jotaro grabbed the superior part of the seat in front of him to support himself and so he wasn’t thrown by the change of course, immediately feeling something wrap around his wrist, something that got him looking down to find a pale and delicate hand around it, moving his gaze from it to the sleeve-covered arm by a green seifuku sleeve, locking gazes with Noriko before she removed her hand, smiling shyly at him as she also supported herself to avoid falling.
Meanwhile, Joseph and Caesia approached the main cabin, finding a woman standing in front of it as she saw them coming, blocking the way.

“Sir, Ma’am, where are you going?” she asked them, intimidated and looking a little nervous by Joseph’s height “This is the cabin, I can’t let you in”

“I already know” Joseph told her as he grabbed her by her shoulders and easily moved her aside, walking inside the cabin while Caesia followed close.

“Sir! Ma’am!” she shouted at them as another air hostess tried to help her, sharing a worried look once they weren’t able to catch the couple before turning as they heard some steps stopping behind them, looking back to find Jotaro, who looked back at them with a frown.

“Oh… He is really handsome” they thought with blushing faces and dreamy looks on their eyes, something that irritated the black-haired teen even more.

“Move, bitch” he told them, roughly brushing them aside and throwing them back as he went inside, following his grandparents.

“Oh, my God!” one of them exclaimed as they fell backwards and were held inside thinner arms.

“Careful” Noriko told them with a kind smile on her face, smile that got her the blushing faces of the two air hostess as they looked at her “I’m sorry, it’s unforgivable that he had been so rough with you two, but this is an emergency”

Her smile turned a little seductive at the dreamy look both females were giving her due to her beauty, something she knew how to use on her favor “Forgive him for me, please”

“Yes…” the two females said with breathless voices, still wearing the same dreamy expression as they looked up at the redhead, totally enamored by her, something that got Avdol staring in confusion at the scene in front of him.
“This is terrible!” Joseph shouted as he roughly opened the door of the cabin and found three dead pilots, sprawled all over the floor and the seats “He caught us!”

“The nerve of him…” Caesia whispered with hate, feeling bad about the dead of innocent at the hands of a disgusting Stand “He knew what he was doing”

“Their tongues were ripped out” Jotaro pointed out as he stood behind them and looked at the scene “That bastard… He had already killed the pilots”

As Joseph directed himself to the controls, Noriko and Avdol entered the scene, gaping in shock at the scene.

“We are losing altitude, he also broke down the automatic pilot” the oldest informed the rest as he checked the indicators “We are gonna crash!”

Before they could find a solution to their current situation, choked and deep screams sounded behind them, forcing them to look back at the man Noriko had previously killed making weird and impossible moves as he stood in front of them, in all his bloody glory.

“What?!” the black-haired teen asked in shock, not expecting it all as, before he could suppress the action, his hand shot out and wrapped around Noriko’s wrist, pulling her away from the Stand user and towards himself in case the old man went to attack.

The man continued to choke and move around before he came to a stop and pointed at them “My Stand’s card, the Tower, represents accidents and interrupted trips” he remained them as blood started to shot out of his wounds “You won’t reach Lord DIO!” he shouted and deadpanned “Even if you survived, you will be ten thousand kilometers from Egypt! The ones that swore loyalty to Lord DIO will come for you, one after the other with no break in between!”

“There exist more Stands that you never imagined!” the old man continued as he pointed at them once again “Lord DIO is the master of the Stands! Lord DIO has the power to control everyone! You will never reach him! You will never reach Egypt!”

And with that, Tower of Gray’s user fell dead in the floor, creating a pool of blood below him as the air hostesses watched in horror at the scene but didn’t scream, overpowered by the fear.
“I wouldn’t expect less from professionals” Jotaro said to the two scared females in his seat as the co-pilot, beside his grandparents “I wouldn’t have tolerated it if you started screaming”

“Listen to me” he told them with a more serious tone “This old man here will try to make an emergency landing” he informed, ignoring the shocked look both of his grandparents were giving him “Make the passengers wear their life vests and adjust their belt seats”

“U-Understood!” the two air hostesses agreed, running out of the cabin to do as they said.

“Old Man” Jotaro said, returning to look back at Joseph, waiting for his answer.

“I have piloted propeller planes but…” Joseph mumbled, with an uncertain expression on his face as he looked at the panels.

“Propeller plans?” Noriko asked in astonishment as she stared at the Joestar man with wide eyes.

“But you know, Jotaro…” the grey-haired man started to say, looking at the panels with a certain gleam on his eyes “This will be my third time in a plane crash” he explained “Have you ever heard of someone that has been in three plane crashes?”

The rest of the group sighed in frustration as they looked away from each other, especially Caesia, who looked at her husband with a deadpanned expression on her face.

“Joseph, if you start doing the same trick you did back in 1939, I’ll make sure to kick your ass once we land” the light blonde promised between gritted teeth, her mind wavering towards their younger days.

“Relax, my dear” Joseph told his wife with a grin as he looked at her “Feel lucky that I won’t pull the same trick I pulled with Speedwagon”

At that, Caesia visibly paled a little and Joseph just laughed and grabbed one of her hands, leaving a kiss in it before taking the steering wheel to take care of their current situation.

“...I will never ride in a damn plane with you ever again” Jotaro promised himself as he looked away from his grandparents, hiding his expression behind his hat.
After Joseph managed to successfully land the plane in the ocean, at thirty-five kilometers from the costs of Hong Kong, the Joestar group managed to scramble away from the scene before someone started to make questions they didn’t want or couldn’t answer without sounding like they were insane.

After they reached the peninsula Kowloon in Hong Kong and found a telephone cabin, Joseph and Caesia went to it immediately and left the rest at the other side of the street, making an important call to their most value ally in this situation and their whole trip.

“Of course, it’s alright” Joseph said to the phone as he hugged his wife close to him so they could both listen to the conversation “Make sure that its only the crew and us in board”

“Just your group and the crew?” the Speedwagon foundation’ worker asked them, trying to make sure if got it right and to check the information.

“That’s right” Caesia confirmed “We don’t want any more victims…”

“By the way…” Joseph continued the conversation, giving a soft squeeze to the blonde.
Meanwhile, Jotaro, Noriko and Avdol stood across the street, waiting for the grandparents duo as they talked since they had made it very clear it was important.

Jotaro was starting to get bored as he waited, but his growing boredom was cut short by someone calling him.

“Hey, big guy!”

At the call, he moved to look at a man standing behind a food stand, shooting them a nervous smile that Jotaro could label as a little fake.

“Are you tourist? Do you guys want congee rice?” the vendor asked them. “If you are in Hong Kong, you have to try the dim sum or the congee rice” he suggested them and picked out something to show them. “We also have hot cola”

“Congee rice? Sounds good” Noriko asked as she turned to the vendor, tempted by the idea before she turned to Jotaro with a smile on her face. “Did you know, Jojo, that, unlike Japan, in Hong Kong they eat congee rice almost every day?” she explained, turning so she was looking back at the other man, ready to make her order as her stomach started to make sounds. “I’ll eat congee rice with centenary egg and pork”

“Right away!”

“Then I’ll have-“ Avdol started to said his order when a voice calling them from behind and made them turn, finding the older couple looking back at them.

“Hey! What do you want to eat?” Joseph asked them as they approached them. “We will go to a friend of mine’ store”

“Hey, sir, ma’am! Would you like to try Hong Kong’s hot cola?” the vendor asked the newcomers as he extended the glass to them in a silent offer.

“Oh no” Caesia mumbled in exasperation, knowing what was about to come and what to expect from her eccentric husband.
Before Jotaro could ask what was wrong since he was able to catch her whisper, his words, that he barely started to blend together, were interrupted by his grandfather’s loud voice, acting as if he was offended.

“Hot?!” Joseph asked in rage, moving away from Caesia to get close to the vendor “Everyone knows that cola is supposed to be drank cold!”

“Old Man, Granny, who did you call?” he asked them, not wanting to heard his grandfather’s whining about something so unimportant.

“Eh? Oh, yeah…” Joseph said as he composed himself, ready to explain “I’ll give you the details when we reach the store” with those words, his expressions hardened at the gravity of their current situation “We need to think of a plan to reach Egypt as soon as possible”

“A plan…” Noriko mumbled, looking down at her shoes as she took into the words and started to think of something.

“Mister and Miss Joestar, we can’t allow more innocents getting hurt” Avdol pointed out at their past incident “The fastest way is by plane, but…”

With a nudge of his head, Joseph started to walk away with Caesia by his side, being followed by the rest to the restaurant they were looking for.

After Joseph, the lead of their group, had said his greetings to his friend, the five of them sat in one of the tables as they waited for a waiter to take their orders after they were lend the menus.

“Exactly, it won’t be possible for us to reach Egypt by plane” he told the rest, resuming their previous main topic of concern “If we cross paths with a Stand user like in our last flight, there is no doubt that more people will die” he pointed out “We have to travel to Egypt by land or sea”
“But we have to find DIO in less than fifty days…” Avdol reminded them a little agitated, staying quiet as the implication of what might go wrong if they didn’t, getting the rest to frown the same way he was doing.

“If it wasn’t for what happened, we would already be in Cairo” Noriko lamented with fire on her words, worried for the sweet woman that had treated her and bandaged her wounds.

“I know” Joseph admitted, looking a little dejected “But it’s too soon to worry about it” but then, he brightened and smiled at the rest, surprising them and making them look at him with different degrees of shocked expressions “One hundred years ago, Jules Verne wrote a book in which his protagonist traveled around the world in eighty days and covered forty-thousand kilometers, that was in times of trains and steamboats”

“Even when we can’t travel by plane, we can reach Egypt in fifty days, there are only ten-thousand kilometers” he continued to explain as he pulled out a map from his coat and unfolded it on the table “Regarding to the route…”

He let the rest lean from their seats towards the map to have a better grip on his idea for their travel and listen to their opinions.

“I say that we should go by sea” he suggested as he used a finger to trace the route “We will rent a good boat, we will pass by the Malaysian peninsula and the Indian Ocean, that’s basically the Sea Silk Route”

“I also think that’s the best option” Avdol agreed with conviction “The borders will be a bother if we travel by land” he pointed out “Besides, we would have to cross The Himalayas and a desert and, if we cross paths with any obstacle, we would lose so much time, it would be risky”

“I have never been in any of those places, so I can’t give any opinion” Noriko stated after a moment of silent, brushing aside the empty air beside her to show her dismiss as she opened her violet eyes to look at the elders “I will let you decide”

“Same here” Jotaro said with closed eyes after giving a sigh and a nod.

“It’s decided then” Joseph nodded in agreement “Our biggest obstacles are the Stand user DIO will send” he told them as he folded the map and put it away, inside his coat “We have to make efforts in reaching Egypt without being detected…”
“And also, we have to be ready for any danger that may come and fight it no matter what” Caesia pointed out as she drank a bit from her teacup that was given to them when they sat down “We will only lose if we stop fighting, and we will have to give our best”

Unbeknown to them, from a table behind them, a man with a menacing aura that sat behind them smirked at the last words exchanged by the blonde woman.

Noriko, who had been listening to the conversation aimlessly now that everything was set, lifted up her teacup and directed it to her lips, ready to drink the hot beverage but looked down when nothing came from it to her, making her look down to see that she had already drink all her tea.

She grabbed the teapot just to check if there was more tea in it but also found it empty, so she place it in front of her and opened the lift to let it half open, creating a sound of the ceramic hitting when she did, earning a quick look from Jotaro to her, startled by the noise.

A little embarrassed for startling him, she greeting him with her hand and a smile, ready to explain herself at his curious look “This gesture means that you want more tea” she said as she used her two hands to cup the teapot “If you do this in Hong Kong, they will serve you more right away”

At her words, one waitress dressed in a typical dress came to the table and served more tea on the redhead’s cup “And also, when they finish pouring the tea…” she continued, tapping one finger on the table as she looked at the other woman with a smile “You give them your “thank you” with this gesture”

Instead of moving her stare and look to another place once the waitress left, Noriko continued to smile at Jotaro at his curious look as he stared at her back, only stopping when she heard Caesia’s voice.

“You seem to know a lot about this stuff, Kakyoin” the blonde started, looking at the younger female with a smile as she leaned back on her seat “Do you travel this often?”

“Yes, ma’am” she confirmed as she turned to look at the older woman “My parents tend to travel very often and, instead of staying back at home, I tag along with them so it doesn’t get lonely”
At the mention of her parents, Noriko’s demeanor lightly turned down a little bit, looking down at her hands with sadness on her features as she thought of them, feeling guilty that she had left without saying goodbye to them, but she didn’t regret it.

Seeing this, Jotaro, unlikely to his normal demeanor, was about to change the topic to get the redhead out of the bubble she had gotten herself into after the mentions of her parents but, before he could even do it, a voice interrupted their silence, making all of them tense before looking at the source of the voice.

“No, do you have a moment?” a man with a weird hairstyle asked them as he approached their table, his face hidden behind the red menu he seemed to be reading. “I’m a French tourist, and I have a hard time reading the kanjis in the menu, could you help me?”

The man in question was tall and had a very well-built, close in height to all the males present and seated around the table, something that stood out was his peculiar hairstyle, that was gray and had a cylindrical form. He also wore a tight black shit tucked on his pants that make his muscles stood out, baggy light gray pants, black and pointy shoes and a pair of earrings that seemed to form a heart if put together.

“You are annoying, go away” Jotaro said, a little irritated by the stranger as he trusted a finger backwards, clearly telling the man to go away and stop bugging them.

“It’s okay, Jotaro” Joseph immediately said to interfere to dismiss his grandson’s rude greeting. “There isn’t any problem” once he clarified things, he turned at the French man with a smile and a stretched hand to take the menu on his hands, eager to help him. “We have come a lot of time to Hong Kong, the kanjis in the menu shouldn’t be a problem to me”.

As he talked, he bragged and hugged Caesia close to him, offering the vacant chair in the table with a smile to the man. “What do you say? Want to join us?”

With a nod and a polite smile, the French man walked to the empty chair and sat, between Avdol and Jotaro, greeting everyone else with a smile, one that he lingered on Noriko, who politely returned it and suppressed a giggle when, from the corner of the eye, saw how Jotaro tried to subtly rearrange his chair so, she assumed, Joseph didn’t catch him, letting it rest close to her, making his pant-clothed legs accidently touch her naked ones due to her skirt rolling up a bit.

“So? What would you want to eat?” Joseph asked their guest as he opened the menu and read out loud “Something with shrimp, duck, shark fin, mushrooms…?”

It seemed that he made up his mind as he lifted a hand and called for a waiter, who eagerly took note of what he was being pointed in the menu as the gray-haired man pointed “We want this, this, this… and also this…” he said, ignoring the serious look the rest of his wife and companions were giving him “Oh, and also this…”
Once he finished saying their order, the waiter quickly left and, in what felt like a blink of the eye, the food the eldest had order was quickly left on their table alongside with their plates, not surprising the rest since Joseph had taken in upon himself to order for them.

“It seems that there is something bovine, fish, clams and frogs…” Avdol listed for the rest as they stared at the food with uncertain painted their faces, except for Jotaro, who looked irritated by the options at hand.

“How picturesque…” Noriko commented for the sake of commenting, not knowing how to feel as she stared at the food.

“I knew this was bound to happen” Jotaro said with frustration, now clearly irritated by his grandfather’s actions while their guest didn’t seem what to do as he gapped like a fish.

“Come on, it doesn’t matter. Be my guest!” Joseph tried to lighten up the mood as he laughed and moved his hands around “Order what you order, it will be delicious!” he added as he laughed some more and grabbed a bowl “Let’s eat!”

Watching as he started to dig in one dish, the rest shared a look and grabbed their respective chopsticks to start eating, mentally preparing themselves for the worst like food poisoning or something.

Grabbing one clam with her chopstick, Noriko started eating it, staring wide eyed to it once the delicious taste of it hit her tongue glands “Woah, this is…”

She could even finish her sentence as she continued to eat more, clearly enjoying the taste while Avdol lifted one ball of meat and eat it, giving a surprised look at the delicious taste once it hit him.

“How is it?” Joseph asked the rest with a satisfied smile as he watched them eat “Delicious, right?”

“You are lucky that I love this food or you would have gotten yourself into a big trouble, Jojo” Caesia said right after she swallowed the delicious food she just eat, holding no heat on her words as she playfully teased her husband, earning herself a wide grin from his happy face as he loudly laughed.
“Preparing these dishes takes a lot of dedication” their new companion commented, catching all of their attention as they watched him pick a star-shaped-carrot and lift it up high enough for them to watch it “Just look at this carrot… It has the shape of a star… Where have I seen one?”

At his words, the five of them stared at him with suspicious looks, alerted by the change of air around the French man as they tensed, ready to fight if needed.

“That’s right” the silver-haired man continued as he held the carrot close to his face “I know someone who has a wife that has a mark like this on her neck…”

Anger immediately boiled inside Joseph’s chest as he stared back with anger at the French man, both hands turned into tight fists as he tried to keep his cool at the mention of his grandmother and the obvious implication hidden in between, holding back once he felt Caesia’s deadly grip on his arm to keep him from doing something reckless.

“You…” Noriko hissed at him as a single conclusion came to her mind “Are you one of…?”

She left her question hanging in the air as he simply smirked and put the star-shaped-carrot on his neck at the same time a bowl with a white liquid started to boil to reveal a large rapier, attached to an armored hand.

“Careful, Mister and Miss Joestar!” Avdol warned the two since they were the closest to their newly found enemy.

With quick moves, Joseph used his prosthetic hand to stop the attack to defend himself and his wife “It’s a Stand!” he shouted and threw himself backwards, following Caesia’s lead to jump back.

“Magician’s Red!” Avdol shouted right after he had flipped the table, calling his Stand that came out with its usual cry, shouting a beam of fire from its mouth, which one that was easily twirled as if it was nothing with the rapier, shocking all of them as it revealed a complete armored Stand that stared at them behind his helmet with blue eyes “What?!” he shouted as he watched the new enemy Stand “Another Stand user!”

They watched as the new Stand continued to twirl the fire it had caught before it shot it towards a flipped table, creating a clock of fire in it with its needles pointing at a determinate hour.
“His rapier is very fast…” Noriko commented from behind Jotaro as he had previously and unconscious pushed her behind him, something that had irritated Noriko a little but had to shallow due to their current situation as she watched their enemy.

“The Chariot is the card of my Stand… Silver Chariot!” the French man informed them
“Mohammed Avdol, I see that you want to die first” he directed himself at the Egyptian, looking at him with cold and empty blue eyes and a cocky attitude “I made a fire clock on that table! I’ll kill you before the clock dials twelve!”

Chapter End Notes

thank you so much for reading (⁄⁄ω⁄⁄)/
hope you had liked this chapter ♡

if you did, please, don't forget to leave a comment (つ‘ω‘c)

don't forget that I love you all so make sure to follow the rules your local authorities had said and stay safe (●●・ω・●●)

see you next Friday (つ‘ω‘c)
Silver Chariot

Chapter Summary

Who would have thought that their second enemy could be someone so... unique?

Chapter Notes

♡ before reading ♡

hi hi hi hi (/\ o /\)/
how have you guys been? (,.• - •,.)■

another week has pass so that means your dear writer updates yet another Jojo chapter, one I know you have been dying for (,.• - •,.)■

today, in a different note, I want to make a tw for the things that will be mentioned about Polnareff’s sister, Sherry, and how this might be triggering for those who are sensible.
I know that it wasn't necessary nor showed in the anime (I haven't read the manga yet so I don't know, please, don't kill me) but I find it necessary just in case.
(don't worry, it isn't that graphic)

now that everything has been said, let's enjoy how Avdol's discovers and bonds with his future husband (つ'ω'c)

See the end of the chapter for more notes

“His rapier is very fast…” Avdol agreed with Noriko’s previous words as he kept a close eye to his rival “Very impressive” he praised with eyes closed and a raised hand “So, you say you will kill me before the flames in the table dials twelve?” with his eyes open, he pointed out at the silver-haired man “Don’t you think that you are being a little bit conceited, Mister…?”

“Polnareff” he, Polnareff, said as he also replied to Avdol’s question “Allow me to introduce myself, I’m Jean Pierre Polnareff”

“Merci beaucoup” Avdol thanked him in French “It was very courteous from your part, but…”

With a finger pointed at the burning table, more flames enfolded it and made it burn even more, earning himself some “oh” from Joseph’s part, shocked stares from both teenagers and a surprised look from Caesia as they watched the scene.
“Monsieur Polnareff, I want you to know that my flames don’t advance nor follow the wind direction like natural fire” he informed to his enemy “My Stand’s name is **Magician’s Red** because it controls fire as it pleases”

With a hum from his user, Silver Chariot slammed the floor its rapier as it rested the hand holding it on the handle, standing close to its user.

“On the beginning of times, fire covered the Earth” Polnareff began to say with a hand on his hip and the other resting on Silver Chariot’s rapier “I wouldn’t expect less from **Magician’s Red**, whose card is one of the first ones and controls flames but, do you really think that I’m bragging?” he asked him with cockiness “Are you saying that my ability with the rapier is pure presumption?!”

The five of them watched as the silver-haired male thrusted up the five silver coins, confusing them for a whole second before they watched the way Silver Chariot lifted its rapier and thrusted it forwards, piercing the five coins in one and single go.

“When the coins lined up, it pierced them with a single thrust!” Joseph pointed with shock, staring with wide eyes at the action.

“Not only that” Jotaro commented as he looked at the armored Stand with a furrowed expression on his face “Take a good look”

The other three did as they were told and gasped in shock when they saw flames in each one of the silver coins as they left behind their silver color and turned a shade of brown.

“But he…” Noriko tried to express once she saw the gravity of the situation, but Avdol interrupted her.

“I see” he mumbled with a closed eye “There is also some flames between the coins”

“I guess you know what that means” Polnareff told them with a smirk dancing on his face “It’s not presumption, my Stand is capable of cutting fire” he informed as his Stand moved its rapier “When it cuts the air, it creates gaps in the space” he pointed out “Your flames are useless against **Silver Chariot**”
They watched as Silver Chariot moved his rapier around before disappearing alongside with its user, making Avdol a little nervous before looking around to find him right in the exit of the restaurant, surprising him for how fast he had moved “How did he-?!”

“My Stand’s card, The Chariot, represents conquest and triumph” the silver-haired man interrupted him as he looked back at them from above his shoulder “It doesn’t bother me to face you in such a small place like this” he admitted, completely emotionless “But Avdol, you surely will feel more comfortable using your flames in a more open space, right?”

He asked, but the rest could see that there was something else behind his words “It will be more proper for my Stand to defeat you in those circumstances” he also added with closed eyes before he looked up once again “It will be a real victory! All of you, out!”

With no room left for discussion, the Joestar group followed right after their enemy, even when the situation practically screamed at them not to, they did with a resigned sigh from all of them.

After a few minutes walking around, they reached a weird part of the city with bizarre and different art all over it, colorful and full of life as it seemed to emulate it with the animals and other things that proudly stood around, with Polnareff taking the lead and standing at the top of the stairs that separated them.

“W-Where the hell are we?!” Joseph asked in confusion as he looked around.

“This is the Tiger Balm Garden” Noriko told the rest as she looked straight into their enemy with sharp amethyst eyes, quickly explaining to Joseph as he turned to look back at her “It’s the weirdest part on Hong Kong in all the meaning of the word”

As she saw Avdol and Jotaro following after Polnareff, she calmly went after them with the married couple right behind her, only stopping when they reached a flat and open arena of the whole place.

“I’ll announce a prediction” Polnareff said out loud as he turned to look at the Egyptian “Avdol,
you will be destroy by the powers of your Stand”

“Avdol…” Jotaro called for the other, his teal-blue gaze locked in their current enemy, in a silent question that was plaguing his mind.

“Jotaro, I don’t need you to interfere” Avdol dismissed the teen as he caught the unsaid question “In an open space like this, I can use my Stand with fully freedom’”

As he heard this, Jotaro stepped back and let Avdol take the lead now that it was clear that the fight was his, and Jotaro was sure that he would success, standing beside Noriko.

Both Egyptian and Frenchman stared at each other with a safe distance between them as Avdol called out for Magician’s Red, who came out with its natural cry, only stopping when Silver Chariot launched itself towards Magician’s Red, throwing its rapier and thrusting it forward, ready to wound and finish the other off.

“Come on!” Polnareff shouted from his position as Silver Chariot moved forward while Magician’s Red moved to avoid the attacks “Come on! Come on! Come on!”

“Come on! What’s wrong?!?” he asked as Magician’s Red continued to avoid the rapier “Don’t you want to use your dear flames?” and continued to ask as his Stand continued to attack “If you don’t do it, I’ll attack first!”

Following its user’s orders, Silver Chariot started to thrust its rapier with quicker moves as its user shouted “Take this! Take this! Take this! Take this! Take this! Take this! Take this! Take this!”

Finally, Avdol let his Stand form and shot some fireballs directed to the other Stand, but he watched in shock as Silver Chariot easily deflected them with its rapier and threw them towards an eagle’s statue, burning it in the process and throwing its remain messily around, revealing a statue with Magician’s Red’s form that lay in the eagle’s original place, replacing it and surprising the Joestar group.

“That bastard is mocking us!” Joseph voiced out as he turned his hand into a fist in anger “With its rapier, it sculpted an identical statue of Magician’s Red!”

“Not bad…” Polnareff falsely praised with a smirk on his face as he laughed “You will very well in the garden, Magician’s Red”

But Avdol didn’t comment, he just stared back at the other before closing his eyes, willing more
power to his Stand as both of them started to glow brighter with the new flames his Stand had started to create.

“Here it comes, he will finally show his real power!” the Frenchman told himself as he hardened his stare at the Egyptian “This will be interesting…” he said as he looked at them “Here! I’m waiting for you!”

Seeing this, Joseph’s rational side started to kick in, looking back at his companions as he noticed what Avdol was about to do “We should hide! Avdol is going to use that technique!”

Once he informed this, Joseph grabbed Caesia’s hand and dragged her away as he jogged out of the scene, leaving the teenagers by themselves, who looked back at each other in confusion.

“What ability?” Jotaro asked as he stared at Noriko with his knitted eyebrows, receiving a shrug as she also jogged out of the scene, being followed by Jotaro, who walked as if nothing was happening.

“CROSSFIRE HURRICANE!” Avdol shouted as he crossed his arms over his chest while his Stand did the same, shooting more flames from its spout and towards the enemy.

“Is that all?!” Polnareff asked in a disappointed shout as he continued to smirk in triumph while the flames got rapidly close to him and his Stand “I already told you that I can create gaps to counter your flames!”

With that said, Silver Chariot charged and shot back the flames as if they were nothing, burning Magician’s Red in the process and making it cry out in pain as its user choked out as the flames
enfolded both of them, surprising the rest of the group.

“Avdol!” Joseph called out for his friend at the scene, both alarmed and worried for him “The fire is so intense that is even burning him!”

“Just like I predicted” Polnareff said as he evilly laughed and watched the Egyptian fall to his knees and hit the ground with the flames still covering him whole “You will die by your own flames”

Avdol just kept quiet and stared at the man, willing his Stand to jump from him and towards the other with a cry as it continued to burn, the same way its user was doing.

“Oh, well, well, well, you will still try to attack me?” Polnareff asked as he saw the Stand coming and threw Silver Chariot to the front “Pathetic!”

As he willed his Stand to thrust its rapier, he felt something weird as it crossed the entirety of Magician’s Red’s chest “That hit felt strange!”

And then, in a blink of the eye, the same flames that were covering Magician’s Red moved and covered Silver Chariot, burning both Stand and its user.

“What?!” he shouted in shock and pain as his skin started to burn “Impossible! Flames came out from the body that I just cut!”
“That wasn’t the Stand but a bait” Joseph took the lead in explaining from his safe spot beside the others as he realized this, pointing at it with a finger.

♥

“The flames blinded you” Avdol calmly explained to Polnareff as he stood, unharmed “What you cut was the statue Silver Chariot sculpted” at the other’s confused throat sound, he continued to explain as his Stand stood behind him “I already told you that I control the flames at my will” he reminded him “The flames that you threw at me melted the statue’s articulations and moved it”

At the other’s shocked expression, he continued “The one who fell under the power of his own Stand was you!” he told him as he frowned “And now… Prepare yourself once again!”

“CROSSFIRE HURRICANE!” he shouted, making his Stand threw more flames at the Frenchman, who shouted in pain as he was thrown back by the force of the hit “You still lack ten years to be able to read the fortune like a fortune teller”

“So powerful!” Joseph exclaimed in awe as he came out from behind a colorful pillar, beside Noriko, who wore a serious expression on her delicate face “He received a direct hit, his Stand must have disintegrated”

“It was an intense attack, he must be already dead” Jotaro commented as he stood in front of the rest, precisely, in front of Noriko “If he is lucky enough, he will end up in the hospital, if not, that will be very unfortunate…”

“Anyway, he won’t be able to get up for about three months” Noriko said as she turned back on her heels and walked down some steps “His Stand was shattered and won’t be able to fight”

“It’s for the best” Caesia agreed as she follow the younger girl’s lead “Mr. Avdol managed himself very well out there, just like I knew he would”

“Very well, Mr. and Mrs. Joestar” Avdol said as he turned to the married couple of the group as he approached them “We can continue our trip to Egypt”
“Yes” Joseph agreed, following the two females as they started to make their way down to fetch their next transport and destination.

Sadly, they didn’t make it that far as, from where they had left Polnareff unconscious body, something exploded, creating a huge cloud of dust that called for their attention as pieces of something messily flew around.

“What?!” Joseph shouted in shock “His Stand shouldn’t be existing!”

“He shot from the ground even when he was laying down!” Noriko shouted in alarm as they watched Polnareff’s body up in the air.

“Bravo! Bravo!” he congratulated as he clapped with a big smile on his face as he looked at them from upside-down.

“He is-“

“Incredible!”

“He is unharmed!”

“But how the hell is he floating?!?” Jotaro asked as he looked at their undefeated enemy with sharp teal-blue eyes.

“Look close” the Frenchman told them as he gave them a breathless laugh, as a transparent figure started to manifest itself behind him, holding him up in the air.

“But it’s-!”

But Avdol didn’t get the chance to finish as Polnareff was thrown upwards, high enough till he landed on his feet and Silver Chariot manifested itself, looking skinner than before as if there was something missing.
“Exactly” he confirmed the unsaid question “My Silver Chariot just took off its armor”

At the shocked expression on the others’ faces, he smirked “You look shocked” he mocked with a hum “It wouldn’t be honorable to defeat you without explaining my powers, you may consider it as a surprise attack so… Would you give me the time to explain to you?”

“Very well” the Egyptian agreed with a nod of his head as he approached the other “I’m all ears”

“My Stand didn’t disintegrate” he started as he placed one hand on his hips “Silver Chariot was wearing its armor, and it just took it off” he quoted what he said before “What you burned with your flames was part of its armor, that’s why my burns are mild” he explained “And now that my Stand took off its armor… Did you see how it lifted me up?”

They stayed in silent, not bothering to answer, action that he took as his answer and continued “Exactly! That’s its natural speed!”

“I see…” Avdol mumbled in understanding “Then, the reason of why it received the direct impact of my Crossfire Hurricane was because its armor is too heavy”

He had been calm at the beginning, but then snapped a foot forward as he put himself in a fighting pose “But that means that its unprotected” he pointed out “Now that it doesn’t have its armor, an impact like the previous one will kill you”

At that, Polnareff looked a little irritated by his words as he crossed his arm in front of his chest, giving him a side grin at that “Oui, precisely” he agreed, but turned his grin into a wicked one “But that would be impossible”

“Impossible?” Avdol asked, intrigued by his words “I would like to check it out”

“I’ll show you something that will live you perplex…”

“Really?” the Egyptian asked one again, lifting an eyebrow in curiosity “Go ahead…”

Without any words, behind Polnareff, Silver Chariot split itself into seven Silver Chariots that pointed their rapiers to the Egyptian, shocking all of the members from the Joestar Group.
“W-What?!” Joseph asked in astonishment as he counted each new Silver Chariot “His Stand multiplied itself in six… No, they are seven now!”

“Is that even possible?!” Caesia asked out loud and in frighten to whoever that could answer her as she kept looking at the new set of Stands.

“No… It can’t be possible!” Noriko quickly answer as she also kept her amethyst eyes locked in the seven Stands “A Stand user can only have one Stand!”

“It seems that I have surprised you” the silver-haired man chuckled at the shocked expression in the other’s face “These are residual images, an army of residual images that not only challenge sight but also your other senses” he explained as he laughed “You won’t be able to follow their moves with your senses”

“What do you think about my ability with the rapier?!?” he asked as his menacing aura returned and started to come from him in waves, launching his Stand to attack and finish his job.

[STAND NAME] Silver Chariot

- Power: C - Speed: A
- Range: C - Durability: B
- Precision: B - Growth Potential: C
In a blink of the eye, the seven Silver Chariots started to thrust their respective rapiers towards Magician’s Red, who avoided each of them as it backed out its body away from each attack.

“RED BIND!” Avdol shouted, commanding his Stand to cry out and threw its fire binds, trying to tie each one of the enemy Stands that were surrounding them but failing in the process as they disappeared in less than a blink of the eye.

“I told you that you wouldn’t be able to follow their moves” Polnareff pointed out as his seven Stands stood behind him and in the air, huffing a laugh as he kept his eyes locked with Avdol’s “The only thing that your flames will touch will be a residual image”

But Avdol ran towards him and let go of his Stand, who cried out once again as it shot more fire binds, trying to tie and defeat the other Stands, but failed once again as they moved and disappeared from sight.

“So you attack randomly…” Polnareff noticed with his arms crossed over his chest, sounding a little disappointed “You seems desperate, Avdol”

“In that way, all he is going to get is wasting his energy” Noriko commented from the sidelines, keeping a close eye to the appearing and disappearing Stands, noticing their pattern.
“CROSSFIRE HURRICANE!” Avdol shouted again as Magician’s Red threw another attack, but came useless as the man the attack was directed to disappeared from the place.

“Non, non, non, non, non, non” the silver-haired man repeatedly denied, moving a finger from side to side, as if he was scolding a child, surrounded by some of his Stands “That was also a residual image” he informed with his hands on his hips “Your attack won’t be of any use against my Stand”

“Come on! Come on! Come on!”

At that, before he could even defend himself, Avdol was stabbed in the face by one of the Silver Chariots, dragging blood from his face as the cuts formed the same figure his Crossfire Hurricane formed when Magician’s Red generated and threw it, pushing him backwards from the force of the hit and lifting up a cloud of dust and sand.

“Avdol!” Jotaro called for the man from the sidelines, alerted by the hit and push he suffered.

“How much precision, you must have…” the Egyptian started as he covered the large wound on his arm and looked at his opponent, who had a dark and unreadable expression on his face “You must have polished your Stand for a very long time…”

“For about ten years, to be precise” the Frenchman commented, stretching an arm in the form of an invitation “Come on, attack me once again, I’ll finish you off with my next move”

“You explain your abilities in the name of chivalry, it seems reasonable to me” he said as he
straightened his position and stood straight “That’s why… I’ll reveal one of my secrets before finishing you off”

“Oh?”

“You see, my Crossfire Hurricane has different versions, it tends to have the shape of an Anj, but it doesn’t have to be only one” he explained “I can split and threw its fragments”

At that, a circle of fire surrounded him as the flames raised higher and fire started to take over his Stand’s arms “CROSSFIRE HURRICANE… SPECIAL!” he shouted as Magician’s Red cried out, throwing different Anjs towards the other “Try to avoid them!”

“How foolish you are, Avdol!” Polnareff shouted, before his seven Silver Chariots surrounded him and formed a circle to protect him.

“He formed a circle!” Joseph pointed out.

“There is no opening!” Noriko objected.

“Naïve! Naïve! Naïve! Naïve! You are naïve!” Polnareff shouted as he launched his Stands to attack once again “I’m going to attack you with your own technique!” he promised, directing himself to his Stands “Attack! Give him back his own technique!”

But then, before any of the Silver Chariots could throw their rapiers, a hole burst open in the ground in front of Stands and Stand user, letting pour a hot and large red bind that quickly burned them, causing the Frenchman to scream in pain as the flames surrounded him whole and threw him
backwards, all of it witnessed by Avdol, who simple went to one knee behind a hole in the ground, similar to the other that hit Polnareff.

“That is…” Joseph mumbled as the rest followed Avdol’s line of view, noticing the hole “The hole the previous flames left behind…” he voiced out as he started to understand and tie the lose knots “I see! He used the first flames to dig a tunnel! And then threw his *Crossfire Hurricane* in it!”

“I told you, I can split my flames and I can threw you all the fragments I want” Avdol explained to his fallen opponent, raising from his kneeled position as he pulled out a dagger from his robes while he watched the man groan in pain as he continued to burn, throwing it and stabbing the ground in front of him.

“Die burned is very painful” he explained at the questioning look the Frenchman shot him “End your life with that dagger if you wish”

With that, Avdol turned his back and walked away from Polnareff, who stretched an arm and grabbed the dagger, gripping it hard and lifting it up above his head with the clear intention of throwing it to the other, but then pulled it below his chin as his conflicted emotions took the best of him to finally drop his arm as pain and fatigue started to take a toll of him.

“I was conceited” the silver-haired man admitted with his eyes closed “I never thought that the flames could defeat my rapier” he stopped for a second as the dagger slipped from his weakened hand “The best will be to die burned, that will be the most proper way to show my respects towards the powers that have defeated me” he stated as his sight started to turn blurry “Killing myself… would be an insult…”

As those words reached his ears, the Egyptian turned around and snapped his fingers, calling back the flames that were burning the now unconscious man, approaching him with respect as both Noriko and Caesia smiled with amusement while Jotaro huffed a breath at the action.

“Even in a moment like this, you didn’t brush aside your chivalry” he noticed as he stopped, showing that the lines of blood that had coursed his face were dry “Without mentioning that you didn’t throw the dagger when I give you my back” he pointed out as he kneeled and grabbed the other, cupping his head from behind as he turned him to force him to lay down on his back “Even if you follow DIO’s orders, your honor comes out, it will be a shame to kill you”

As he felt something off, he moved his finger to the base of the silver hair “There must be a reason behind your actions” he said as he found a squirmy flesh bud hiding between the strands, so he immediately turned to the youngest man “Jojo…”

“Yes” Jotaro agreed, calling out Star Platinum to remove the parasite.
“Those tentacles are disgusting!” Joseph hysterically cried out in disgust as he squirmed around in discomfort while his grandson repeated the same process he did with Noriko “Hurry up, Jotaro! Quick! Quick!”

“Shut up, Jiji” the black-haired teen snapped back to his grandfather, commanding his Stand to pull out the flesh bud, one that disintegrated once it was exposed to the direct sunlight.

Once he finished, Jotaro stood up from the ground and beside Noriko as Joseph went to his knees and picked up an unconscious Polnareff, placing him on his lap with a wide grin on his face “Now that we pulled out his flesh bud we can be buddies, how is that?”

“Move, Jojo” Caesia said with a roll of her eyes as she went to her knees and pushed Joseph aside, whose grin never faltered from his face as he looked at the rest while she called out for her Hamon and healed Polnareff’s wounds with it.

“Kakyoin… Doesn’t it piss you off when idiots like him pull up shitty puns like those?” Jotaro asked the redhead as he looked back at her, who chuckled at the choose of his words to describe his grandfather as she returned the look.

“Well… Only if they are so awful like that one” she said, laughing at the offended look Joseph threw her, smiling when she swore she saw that Jotaro’s lip corners were pulled up a little, obvious that he was suppressing his smile, something she took as a victory.

The next day, after having breakfast in the hotel the six of them crashed in after the battle, Joseph, Caesia, Avdol, Jotaro and Noriko walked around the docks with all their luggage as the former took the lead to explain.
“The boat we got yesterday with Speedwagon’s Foundation must be in the dock right now” he informed, using a hand to shield the burning sun from his eyes, stopping as a man stepped in their way, making the rest stop. “Do you need something, Polnareff?”

“What’s wrong?” Avdol asked the Frenchman, the man that stood in front of them and forced them to stop. “What’s wrong?” Avdol asked the Frenchman, the man that stood in front of them and forced them to stop. “Do you need something, Polnareff?”

“I haven’t thanked you for freeing me from DIO…” Polnareff explained as he looked a little ashamed from the event of the day before.

“You should thank Jojo for that” Avdol said, looking at the black-haired teen to signal him.

“It’s not necessary” Jotaro said, moving his head a little so his gaze was shielded by his hat and refused the thanks.

“It seems that no one wants to accept your gratitude…” Avdol informed the silver-haired man with a short breathless laugh.

It seemed that Polnareff, indeed, wanted to say something, but he just bite down his words and looked defeated. “I understand, I hate pressuring people, but there is something that I want to ask…” he said, approaching Joseph with a raised finger. “Monsieur Joestar, I would like to ask you a bizarre question”

“A bizarre question?” Joseph asked, intrigued by the words as he cupped his chin with a gloved hand.

“I may be meddling but when we ate, you never took off your gloves…” Polnareff started, looking dead serious as he talked with his arms crossed over his chest. “Wouldn’t it be that your left hand is a right one?”

“That my left hand is a right one?” Joseph asked as he looked at his hands before looking back at the French man. “That’s a bizarre question, where do you wanna go with it?”

“I look for the man that killed my little sister” he revealed, shocking the Joestar group at the
sudden change of air around them “I don’t know his face, but I know he has two right hands”

They stayed quiet for a few seconds as they tried to process the cruel information that was revealed to them, watching as Caesia gave a squeeze to Joseph’s arm before he took off his glove, revealing a mechanic hand.

“I lost this hand in a horrible fight fifty years ago” he explained as he moved his fingers around, making them crack a little with the moves “And I have had this hand ever since…”

“We fought side by side, I can confirm it” Caesia added, flashing an understanding smile to the Frenchman.

“I beg you to forgive my discourtesy” Polnareff apologized to the two, bowing his head and closing his eye.

“If you don’t mind, could you give us more details?” Joseph requested the man, received a subtle nod, turning his back to them and stepped aside, something they respected.

“It was three years ago…” he started, with a voice full of nostalgia and remorse “It was a rainy day, my sister was coming back from school with a classmate, in a rural path on my country, France” he explained as he turned distance “Beside the road, there was a man with his back turned to them, and, even when it was raining hard, a type of an invisible force field kept him completely dry…”

“Suddenly, her classmate’s chest opened as if it had been cut by a sickle” he paused for a bit, as his pain and guilt took over him, trying to avoid the tears from falling from his eyes “And then… He abused and killed her… It was all that man was looking for!” he revealed, the image of his dear sister forever burned on his mind “By miracle, her friend survived the attack, she said that she never saw the man’s face but she noticed that he had two right hands”

“No one believed her testimony, but I did!” he said as he looked at his hands “Because I thought that that man could have had a similar power to the one I fought so hard to hide”

“There is no doubt, he is a Stand user” Joseph confirmed as he pushed Caesia close to him as he felt her shiver at the story.

“I swore that I would find him!” Polnareff told them, turning to look back at them with fire on his words “My sister’s soul won’t rest until I avenge her! I’ll kill him with my Stand!” he shouted and then pointed at them “A year ago… I met DIO!”
The travels that he did to look for his sister’s murder made Polnareff stumble into a castle, where he had gone inside for the light that he saw shining on the tallest tower, reaching the place in time to see a blonde man guiding a woman’s delicate hand towards a crystal ball, hand that had purple vines coming from it, placing it above the ball and letting them explode as a light started to shine inside the crystal.

“I see something in the crystal ball!” Polnareff had said in shock as he watched wide-eyed at the image that was starting to form in it “That’s-!”

“A vision that I didn’t generate” the man cut and answered for him with a seductive tone of voice as he caressed the woman standing beside him, pulling her flush to him as, in one of his shoulders, an eagle with a menacing look sat “Her powers help to project what is inside your heart… What do you think?”

With calculated moves, from his frozen position, Polnareff watched as the blonde man moved the long and black curly strands away from the woman’s shoulder, revealing a start-shaped-birthmark close to her neck as he turned them to look at him before sliding the hand till it rested on her hips “Do you want to be our friend?”

“You have issues, you feel pain” he told him with a smoothing tone “If you join me, I can free you from what troubles your heart” he proposed as the crystal ball started to shine brighter than before and the blonde strands of his hair moved with the night breeze “What appears in the crystal ball is what troubles you, right?”

“Let me help you” he said as Polnareff stood frozen on his spot “I also suffer since my body can’t see the sunlight so help me, please” he continued “I’ll take care of finding that man”

And then, in the blink of an eye, long strands of blonde hair shot from the man’s head and towards Polnareff, stabbing him on the forehead as he screamed, with the last image of pity and guilt the noirette woman shot him…
“And then, he ordered me to kill you…” Polnareff finished his tales with a tired expression on his face “I thought I was doing the right thing…”

“It was part of the flesh bud’s fault, but he is good at manipulating people by his own” Avdol decided to say as the rest stayed quiet at the overwhelming information they just received.

“Yes, but what you said, it’s very likely that DIO had found the man with two right hands and has incorporated him to his rank” Noriko commented as she put herself in deep thought.

“I decided to join you in your trip to Egypt!” Polnareff told them with strong conviction “If I go after DIO, I will find the man that killed my sister!”

“What do we do?” Noriko playfully asked the rest as she put her hands on her hips, sharing a look with Caesia who shot her back the same playful look.

“I don’t oppose” Avdol simply said as Jotaro grabbed the brim of his hat and pulled it down with a huff.

“I’m sure that you would follow us even when we say no to you” Joseph simply said, shrugging his shoulders, accepting the man on their group.

Name: Jean Pierre Polnareff.

Stand name: Silver Chariot.

Powers: An agile and precise control of the rapier.
“It will be my pleasure” Polnareff told them with a big grin on his face.

At that, Jotaro sighed as he knew what was coming, closing his eyes as he started to say “Yare Yare~”

“Excuse me” a high pitched voice interrupted him, making him open his eyes and look at the side, finding two young girls standing beside him, with one of them holding a camera “Could you take us a picture?”

“How handsome!” the first one said to herself.

“This is my chance!” the other girl thought.

“Please!” the first girl begged.

“We want one with the ocean behind us” the girl number two explained.

“Shut up and fuck off! Go bother someone else!” Jotaro snapped at them, irritated by the two girls and their high pitched voices.

“Jojo-~” Noriko said as she tried to scold him but, as she felt a hand on her shoulder, she stopped and looked at the other just to find Caesia’s resigned face that was giving her a sympathetic smile.

“Don’t bother, dear” the blonde told the younger as she squeezed her shoulder “Once a Joestar man takes that kind of attitude, only the years will change them”

Before Noriko could ask more about what Caesia meant, she was distracted by Polnareff, who approached the girls with a big grin on his face.

“Now, now, now…” he said as he excitedly told the girls “I’ll be the one who takes the picture, let’s go, let’s go” he added as he scooted the girls and urged them to the dock, getting them away from an irritated Jotaro “You have pretty legs, I’ll take a full body-shot!”
The rest watched with a little concerned as Polnareff took the girls’ pictures, wondering and questioning the man’s sanity at the sudden change in his personality, questioning their own reasoning to accept him in the group.

“What a fluctuating person…” Avdol commented with uncertain tainting his voice as he looked back at the rest.

“He changes his mood really fast, don’t you think?” Noriko also commented with uncertain as she looked at the scene.

“More so, I think that his head and the inferior part of his body are way too separate” Joseph added his own comment at the ridiculous scene.

“Mamma mia”

“Give me a break”

Both grandmother and grandson said at the same time, making Caesia turn to look at her grandson with a proud smile as he grabbed the brim of his hat and pulled it down, irritated by the ridiculous behavior of their new companion.

Chapter End Notes

thank you so much for reading (つ′丿′c)
I hope you have enjoyed this chapter like the others and you have had a great time reading it♡

also, thank you so much for all the love and support you have been giving me since the first fic, through the second one and this on-going baby (/▽ ω▽)/

the amount of kudos and hints scares me for how fast this series have grown, but I promise that I will keep giving you the chapters you all deserve♡

as always, please leave a comment with your opinion to let me know what you think (,,• - •,,)■
with that say, see you guys next week♡

saranghae♡
Dark Blue Moon

Chapter Summary

It came from the sea!

Chapter Notes

♡ Before reading ♡

HI HI HI HI ♡

welcome back to another episode/chapter (whatever you want to call it) in this story after another successful week full of expectation (/♡ω♡)/

I hope you guys had been excited for this one since it has a good amount of Jotakak moments in here as well as the next one (with my touch, obviously) and let me tell you that you will start seeing more development between these two from now on („• - •„)

but, before you move forward, I just want to remind you that this whole fic is a retelling of what happened in the anime, which mean that I will be covering every single detail that had been showed in the said animation so, if you just came for the development of Jotaro and Noriko's relationship I need to remind you that this whole series is about multiple ships and the family curse that every single Joestar has to face that has been treated in these episodes.

also, keep in mind that I'm rewriting what we saw in canon with a few added details that won't be plastered in the front page, you will find them along the way since that's what a fanfiction is about.

if you are annoyed that you are only reading what happened in the anime I will advice you to put more attention in what you read since I haven't done the whole rewrite for nothing :) but, if that is not your style and you don't want to be patient, I invite you to stop reading and leave if you are going to complain about it :)

now that everything is clear, ENJOY ♡

See the end of the chapter for more notes

After two hours, the Joestar group found themselves in the middle of the ocean on their way to Singapore, using the boat Joseph and Caesia had requested from the Speedwagon Foundation to lend them so they wouldn’t risk more innocent lives on their crusade to Egypt.
“Navigate from Hong Kong to Singapore will take three complete days” Joseph informed the others, standing in front of them as he wore a red and white striped tank top he had changed into so he wouldn’t die from the burning heat “We better keep our spirits up”

With that, he turned to the teenagers, unconsciously sweating even more with just the look he gave them “Seriously guys…” he mumbled as he whipped away some of the sweat on his forehead “Aren’t you going to take off your uniforms?” he asked with an arched eyebrow “Are you going to wear them through all the journey? Don’t you think it’s really hot for you to wear them?”

In front of Joseph, Jotaro and Noriko sat (mostly Noriko since Jotaro was sprawled over his chair) in two lounge chairs, with the former using his arms as a cushion since he had them behind his head and his hat to protect his face from the sun with his eyes closed while the redhead had one folded leg and another stretched as she read a book.

“We are students…” Noriko started to explain, forming her excuse for not having changed her uniform instead of saying she was lazy to do so “And for that, we have to look like it, even if we are pushing it a bit”

“Hmph” Jotaro huffed a breath, catching the discrete jab she threw at him.

“Japanese students are so stiff, man” Joseph pointed out as he rubbed his jaw, deep in thought.

“I see… So that’s Bushido” Avdol said beside Polnareff, who was looking at the ocean below them, close to the railing “With a clear mind, even fire seems cold”

“With so much formality, girls won’t fall in love with stiffs like you, Jotaro” Polnareff jabbed at the black-haired teen and then turned to the girl beside him “Am I not right, Noriko? You wouldn’t fall for a guy who is stiff, right?”

“Well, I don’t know how to answer that” said girl admitted, closing her book as she was resigned to not continue reading it by the nature of the conversation, her cheeks tainting a lovely shade of pink by her embarrassment “I can’t give my opinion since I haven’t fallen in love not even once”

Noriko felt a little embarrassed to admit that in front of them, but she was a brutally honest person and she wasn’t going to change it, so it was better to admit now that the subject was brought up by the Frenchman, who looked shocked to hear her words.

The redhead knew she was beautiful and quite a catch due to her red locks, violet eyes, pale skin and her curvy but thin figure, so it wasn’t a big surprise that her ex-classmates from her previous
school pestered and surrounded her for it, both boys and girls, but she had ignored them all in favor to keep them at bay since, deep down, she knew they would never see nor live in the same world as herself, something that not even her parents could ever do, resulting in never involving herself in romantic nor platonic relationships, resulting in her being unexperienced in the field.

Polnareff looked as if he wanted to say something but was interrupted by the arrival of Caesia, who had changed out of her black suit into a white tank top, beige and baggy short that reached above her knees and beige boots, wearing her sunglasses, ones that pulled down to look at Polnareff with her sharp green eyes.

“Give the girl a break, Polnareff” she scolded him as she crossed her arm below her chest “Don’t be so noisy about it”

Once again, Polnareff looked as if he wanted to say something else, but was quickly interrupted by a sharp scream coming close to them, making them all look at the ruckus going on, dragging them out of their bubble.

“Let me go! I tell you to let me go!” a boy shouted as he wiggled inside a sailor’s grip “Put me down! Damn it!”

“Shut up!” the sailor shouted at the child as he lifted him up as the child kicked his legs out, still trying to free himself.

“What is going on?” Joseph asked the man, annoyed by the scene and the scandal “We agreed that there weren’t going to be passengers in this ship”

“I apologize Mr. Joestar, but this is a stowaway” the man explained as he kept his grip on the child “This dwarf hide himself in the lower storage area”

“A stowaway?” Joseph asked in confusion, lifting an eyebrow.

“If you wanna fight, go ahead!” the boy shouted as he kept wiggling inside the man’s grip while Polnareff and Avdol started to approach the scene “I’ll hit you right in the crotch!”

“Hmph, I’ll give you off to the Naval Police”
“What? The Police?!” the kid asked in frighten, his attention called at the sailor’s words, getting out from his grip “I beg you, don’t report me, I just wanted to see my father in Singapore!” he explained, desperate to not be reported “I will do anything! I’ll help with the ship’s chores!”

“Let’s see, then…” the sailor said as he grabbed the boy’s cheek and pulled, pretending to be deep in thought “Should I let you go? What should I do?”

“I beg you!”

“I’m sorry but no, not at all” the sailor refused as he flicked the boy’s nose, ignoring him as tears fell down his face and whipped them away with the sleeve of his shirt “I have to communicate this to the captain first so come with-“

A scream ripped the man’s throat as the kid suddenly bite him hard before running to the railing and jumped it, quickly throwing himself to the sea.

“Woah! He jumped into the water!” Polnareff exclaimed as he watched the scene, ignoring the pained cries of the sailor “He is very energetic!”

“Wouldn’t he be thinking of swimming to the shore from here?” Noriko asked a bit worried for the kid as she stood from her seat and went towards the railing to keep an eye on the kid, making Jotaro open his eyes at that.

“What do we do?” Joseph asked the rest as he also watched the scene.

“Let him do whatever he wants” Jotaro scolded, looking at them as he still rested on his chair “If he dived into the water, he must be confident that he would make it”

“The boy will have problems! This a shark zone!” the sailor informed them once he stopped screaming, alarming them deeply for the gravity of the action.

“We are in big trouble!” Noriko exclaimed as she gripped the railing hard, as all them saw a shark’s shadow swimming below the kid as he swam further away.
“Hey, brat! Come back here!” Joseph called for the kid “It’s dangerous!”

“The water is full of sharks!” Polnareff shouted, just in time to see the shark’s fin surfacing as the animal swam to the kid, making him scream as he floated frozen.

But then, as the shark opened its mouth, it was thrown up in the air as Star Platinum appeared and hit it, showering the animal with punch after punch as he cried out “ORA! ORA! ORA!”

In the kid’s eyes, all he could see was punches appearing in the entirety of the shark’s body before it was thrown backwards, before he was grabbed by the collar of his shirt by a big hand and pulled to be face to face with Jotaro, who had his irritated face as he stared at the kid before he closed his eyes.

“Give me a break, you brat” he told him before dragging him by his overalls, stopping when he felt something out of place below his hand, so he pressed his hand on the “boy’s” chest as he felt around while the kid gasped and stared at him in horror “You are-“

With the back of his hand, he quickly slapped away the kid’s cap, letting out long strands of black hair, revealing that he was a she instead “You are a girl” he pointed out as she covered her chest with her arms “And one very immature at that”

“How dare you touching me like that?!” she growled at him as she shot him a deadly stare while she threw her arm to hit him “You bastard!”

“Give me a break” he mumbled as he blocked the hit with one arm and pulled the brim of his hat down, gripping the girl’s wrist as he started to swim back to the ship.

Meanwhile, the rest of the group watched everything from above, the sudden splash from where the shark had previously landed called the grandparent duo’s attention, watching as the waters in the place tainted red and the ripped body of the animal surfaced as something swam around, revealing the fin of a creature that revealed four eyes that looked unnatural.

It hissed and that called Jotaro’s attention, who looked back at the Stand.
“J-Jotaro! Below you! Something is getting close to the surface!” Joseph warned the black-haired teen as the creature swam with an abnormal speed “It’s not a shark, but it’s very fast!” he shouted “Quick, Jotaro! Swim back to the ship!”

“He is way too far!” Avdol shouted as a cold sweat adorned his forehead.

Noriko saw as Jotaro changed his grip on the girl to swim faster, but seemed to be useless as their new enemy Stand swam way faster than him while he tried to reach the life-savior some sailor had thrown to help, so she jumped into action.

“I’ll take care of this!” she informed the rest as she called out for her Stand, making it jump from the railing and towards the other two “HIEROPHANT GREEN!”

In time, the feminine looking Stand gripped Jotaro’s wrist and pulled him up with the girl, as the sea-creature Stand, with its long nails, ripped apart the life-savior the black-haired teen had reached some seconds before.

“It disappeared! It’s a Stand!” Polnareff pointed out as they helped Jotaro and the girl up “That thing was a Stand!”

“A sea Stand…” Avdol mumbled in wonder “I have never heard of something like that”

With a last effort, Jotaro and Noriko grabbed each other’s arms as she helped him to establish himself on his feet, dropping unceremoniously the girl to the ground, who landed on her knees and breathed heavily while Jotaro went to stand beside Noriko, as all of them gathered together in a semi-circle and looked at the girl with serious faces.

“That girl… Could she be…?” Avdol asked in a whisper to the rest, leaving incomplete the question for the rest to give their own conclusions.
“Could she be the one who masters that Stand?” Polnareff completed to make it clearer as he whispered back.

“Could she have brought Jojo to the shark-infested waters on purpose?” Noriko asked as she thought of the situation over and over again, trying to find the tale-tale sign of the little girl being a Stand user.

“What are you staring at?!” the girl asked them as she started to look for something on her overalls. “I don’t like the way you are looking at me! I don’t know what’s going on but… Do you want to fight?!” she challenged them as she waved the blade she pulled out and pointed at them with it.

“Don’t underestimate me! I’ll face you!” she told them as she made a sign to come at her “One-on-one! Attack me one at time! Fucking assholes!”

“She can’t be serious, should we threw her back at the ocean?” Polnareff asked them, sounding irritated by the girl’s behavior.

“Don’t rush it” Noriko hissed back at Polnareff “If she is a normal person, she will be eaten by sharks…”

“We checked the ten people in this ship” Joseph told them.

“There isn’t other way so we can prove it?” Caesia asked them, warry of the girl that switched her blade from hand to hand.
“Hey, how is DIO doing?” Avdol asked the girl as the idea came to his mind, looking dead serious at the girl.

“DIO? Who the hell is that?” the girl asked in return, still pointing her blade at them.

“Don’t play dumb, brat!” Polnareff snapped at her with anger.

“Filthy vandals!” the girl snapped back at him as she put herself on a fighting position “Do you want to talk or get stabbed? What do you prefer?” and then, she moved her blade to her face “This cursed blade demands me the blood of its three hundred and forty”

At that, Noriko couldn’t stop nor help the giggle that escaped her mouth at the girl’s words, finding it cute that she was so harsh and was insulting them so openly, something that made the girl blush and point her blade to her.

“What are you laughing of, stupid grunt?!”

“Grunt?” the redhead asked, now amused by the girl’s attitude, looking back at the rest “I don’t think that’s her”

“Even though…” Joseph started to say, rubbing his chin, deep in thought.

“So she is our stowaway?” a man’s voice asked as he roughly grabbed the girl by the shoulders, making her screech in frighten as she looked up at him.

“The captain…” Joseph mumbled, looking at the man as Jotaro pulled out a cigarette, placed it on his lips and lighted it up.
The captain said nothing to greet them, he just pulled the girl up and twisted her arm, making her scream in pain as she tried to free herself from the grip due to all the pain she was experiencing.

“I’m very strict when it’s about stowaways” he started to say as he looked down at the girl with an odd aura all over him, something that alerted Jotaro “Even if you are a girl, I will have to set the example with you, if not, more stowaways will start appearing”

With a final scream of pain, the girl finally dropped her weapon, her feet touching the ground as the captain let go of her but gripped her wrist “We will have to lock you in one of the rooms till we reach the docks”

“Captain, I have a question” Joseph began to say, looking at the scene with disgust for the man’s actions but kept his face bare of his own emotions “Can you verify the identity of the ten men in the ship?”

“Of course” the captain said, sounding a little offended by the question “All of them are veterans that have worked in this ship for about ten years” he said as he lend the girl to the other sailors and approached them “I don’t understand what could make you so restless…”

“By the way!” he exclaimed as he moved fast and ripped the cigarette from Jotaro’s mouth with two finger, surprising the black-haired teen that glared back “Don’t smoke on my ship, please”

Meanwhile, Caesia’s fierce green eyes practically shot daggers to the man behind her sunglasses, trying to suppress her rage for the man talking to her grandson in such fashion, backing down since she knew he was more than capable of handling himself.

“What were you planning to do with the ashes and butt of your cigarette? Were you thinking of throwing them to the beautiful ocean?” the captain continued to ask the teen “In this ship you are nothing more than guest, so you should follow my rules, Mister Outlaw…”

“He shouldn’t have done that…” Noriko winced to herself as she saw the scene, with the rest of the group, the captain crush the cigarette against one of Jotaro’s hat pins, looking straight into his face to find it serene but with his teal-blue eyes burning with contained rage.

Having enough of it, Caesia was about to launch herself at the captain for threatening her grandson like that, taking advantage of the shocked and gapping expression of the rest, but was stopped by Joseph who, knowing his wife short tolerance towards those who dared to insult her loved ones, was quick to act and held her back.
“Understood?” the man asked Jotaro after he had placed the crushed cigarette inside one of his coat pockets, walking away from him as if nothing had happened, while Jotaro hide his fisted hands on his pockets.

“Hold it” Jotaro called for the captain, who looked back at him above his shoulder as he let go of the girl “If you have asked, I would have turned it off” he told him “Don’t be a condescending prick about it, you jackass”

All the presents, minus Caesia (who beamed with pride at her grandson) and Noriko (who looked amused as she held back a chuckle), gasped in shock at the insult, including the captain, who fully turned to face him with shock painting his features.

“Jotaro! Don’t insult the captain!” Joseph scolded his grandson as he shot a angry look at his wife for the lack of scolding from her part, approaching him with his arms stretched “It’s your own fault”

“Hmph” he huffed out, standing on his whole height as he looked at the captain with sharp eyes “I know very well that I’m disrespecting him” he replied to his grandfather “But he is not the captain… I just figured it out… He is the Stand user!”

“What…?” Joseph tried to formulate as shock took the best of him.

“WHAT?!” the rest of the Joestar asked in shock.

“S-Stand?” the captain asked as he blinked, obviously confused by Jotaro’s accusation “What might that be?”

“That’s inconceivable, Jotaro” Avdol told the younger, confused by the accusation he just made “The captain was personally selected by the Speedwagon Foundation, who also verified his identity” he also added as he presented the man with a hand “We can trust him, it’s impossible that he may be that Stand user”

But Jotaro only hmphed at that, shrugging his shoulders as the six of them watched the weird moves the man in question was doing.

“Hold on, what is that thing of the Stand?” the man asked them “I don’t know what you are talking
“Jojo, you will only confuse us with your random guessing!” Polnareff snapped back.

“Can you prove it, Jotaro?” Noriko asked the teen, looking back at him as she stood in a defensive pose, ready to attack if needed since she knew she could trust his judgment.

“I discovered a way to differentiate the Stand users from normal people”

“What?!” Joseph asked in surprise, trying to connect the dots to where his grandson was going with all he had pulled.

“You see… When a Stand user inhales even a tiny bit of the smoke from a cigarette…” Jotaro started to explain, positioning two finger in front of his own nose as he stared at the captain “A vein poops up from the tip of their nose”

At that, Joseph, Avdol, Polnareff, Noriko, Caesia and the captain touched their noses, startled by the bizarre theory Jotaro just told them, effectively proving the rest that he was right about the captain.

“What are they even doing?” the girl asked herself, arching an eyebrow at the odd behavior the other were showing.

“You are lying, aren’t you, Jotaro?!” Polnareff asked him, clearly frightened as he touched his nose as he approached him.
“Yes, it was a lie” Jotaro admitted as he moved his gaze from the Frenchman to the captain “But it looks like we have found our idiot”

With that, all the Crusaders turned to look at the captain, watching as he kept touching his nose while the girl looked around, confused.

Silence naturally fell around them as the ship was softly rocked by the waves as the group kept their eyes glued to the fake captain, who started to have a dark and menacing aura all over him.

“Jotaro” Joseph took it upon himself to break the silence as he approached his grandson from behind “Why did you suspect of him?”

“To be honest, I didn’t know it was him” Jotaro confessed, receiving a blank stare of his grandfather, one he ignored in favor to continue his explanation “I had planned to use that trick with the whole crew”

“You are cold… Damn, you are really cold…” the fake captain told the younger with a wicked grin “You are right, I’m not the captain” he admitted with no shame in his actions “The real captain is sleeping with the fish in the deepest of Hong Kong”

“Then you will sleep in the deepest of Hell!” Jotaro told the man as he pointed at him with a finger, but the man only laughed at the threat.

And then, a large and blue arm with sharp nails stretched and grabbed the girl by one of her ankles, ripping a terrified scream from her throat at the invisible force that was gripping her tight and in place, calling the black-haired teen’s attention to her.

“Damn it!” Polnareff, Avdol, Noriko, Joseph and Caesia cursed as they watched the sea Stand go up and stand in the railing, holding the girl tight to its chest and wrapping its arms around her middle and arms to immobilize her.

“I can’t move!” the girl whined as she moved her legs to try and free herself, being pinned by something she couldn’t see.
Trouble with the sea!
Lies and betrayals!

The Moon card represents the fear to the unknown!

Its name… Dark Blue Moon!

“It will be very problematic fighting against the six of you at the same time so I decided to hide and kill you one by one” the fake captain confessed as he stared back at them “But now that you discovered me, I have no other option left, I’ll face all of you!”

“Putting my hands on this girl must be a sign that my luck is getting better” he bragged with his arms crossed over his chest and eyes closed as he leaned back on the railing “I’ll jump to the shark-infested waters with this girl” he added “I’m very confident that you will follow me”

“If we fight in the waters, my element, I can face all of you at the same time”

“Don’t underestimate me taking a hostage!” Jotaro warned the man with his stoicism “Do you think you will intimidate me with that?”

“Underestimate you?” the other asked with a smirk on his face “I’ll make a prediction: They told me that your Stand, Star Platinum, is very fast… Not to brag, but Dark Blue Moon is also fast in water, swims more gracefully than any fish in the sea!”

Jotaro said nothing, he just kept staring back at the man as he stood on the railing, side by side with his Stand as he laughed.

“Would you like to check it out?” the fake man continued “Follow me… If you are ready to drown at the sea, of course”
With those last words, the man threw himself backwards alongside with his Stand, making the girl scream in frighten.

Seeing this, Star Platinum came out from Jotaro and threw himself towards the water with his characteristic cry, hitting with his fist the enemy Stand over and over again, dragging blood from both Stand and Stand user, almost pulverizing the water Stand till he threw it away from them, grabbing the girl by her wrist before she hit the cold waters.

“His attack was even faster than its falling speed… it’s impossible…” the fake man choked out in deep breathes as he floated in the waters, blood falling from his forehead to the water.

“It seems that the only one who will drown at the sea will be you” Jotaro told the man from his position in front of the railing, with Avdol and Polnareff beside him, giving thumbs down to their enemy “Avdol, say something to him”

“You tried to make a prediction in front of a fortune-teller…” Avdol started to say.

“… But it’s ten years too early for you” Polnareff completed, repeating the same words Avdol had told him when they fought each other.
He will go with the flow” Polnareff commented as the group watched the captain’s body being moved by the waves “And all he bragged about his Stand, what an idiot he ended up being”

A loud sound called for their attention as they watched as Jotaro slammed his free hand into the railing, his whole body shaking with the strength he was using to keep himself inside the ship, sweating buckets of sweat under the burning and ghostly sensation of the sun looming above him.

“Jotaro, what’s going on?” Joseph asked his grandson with arm crossed as he watched him “Pull her up!”

But he didn’t answer and groaned instead, concentrating both his mind and strength to not fall into the water, as he felt a horrible pain on his arm.

“What’s wrong, Jotaro?” Joseph asked his grandson once again, more alarmed than before as he approached him.

“D-Damn it… Something is pulling me down…” Jotaro hissed as something started to spread all over his Stand hand and arm, resulting in blood shooting from his hands.

“Those are-!” Avdol exclaimed as he was able to see what was pulling him down.

“Barnacles!” Noriko pointed out, completing what Avdol was about to say, “Those are barnacles!”
“They are all over Star Platinum and the ship’s hull!” Joseph pointed out as he wrapped an arm around his grandson’s waist, trying to pull him back and free him from the enemy attack, with Caesia’s arm wrapped around his waist while Avdol and Noriko tried to help.

“He still wants to fight” Jotaro pointed out as he felt both tugs from their respective directions, trembling a bit as he tried to stay still “They got attached to me when I hit it and they keep multiplying! They are absorbing my Stand’s energy…”

At his words, Joseph raised his head and looked where they had seen the fake captain’s body, only to find it gone “It disappeared! The captain’s body isn’t there!”

And that alarmed Caesia too, making her tug and hold harder onto Joseph for dear life, knowing that the bastard wasn’t going down without a fight “Jotaro! Pull out you Stand!”

“I can’t!” Jotaro shouted at his grandmother “That’s also why… I’m sweating like a pig!”

With that, Jotaro slipped out of everyone’s grasp and fall back into the water as they screamed his name, but only one stood from the rest, and that called for his attention.

“Jojo!”

Hearing Noriko’s scream of his name, he immediately knew she had called out for her own Stand so, using his own, threw the girl up and towards Hierophant Green’s grasp as he felt right into the water and quickly sank in.

“Damn it!” Joseph and Caesia cursed as their grandson quickly disappeared from their sight.

“We are in big trouble!” Noriko stated as she pulled the little girl up, looking around the blue waters to find the black-haired teen.
Jotaro let out the deep breathe he had taken before he went into the water, calling out for Star Platinum when Dark Blue Moon appeared right in front of him.

He quickly made his Stand throw his barnacle-covered-fist forward, giving his cry, but both of them ended up getting trapped in a whirlpool that threw them towards a hard stone covered by some marine life, stunning him as he bite back the pain the hit produced on his back, causing Star Platinum to disappear before looking up and finding the smirking captain above him.

“Welcome! Welcome!” the bastard laughed with his wicked grin intact, with his Stand swimming behind him “So you finally decided to Dark Blue Moon’s element, the ocean”

But Jotaro only gave him his sharp look, not bothering to answer him as he watching him move his hand closer and lick his own blood.

“Don’t underestimate me, oni-chan” he told him with a dark aura all over him “Even when we are under water, we can use our Stands to communicate so keep talking the same way you were doing in the ship, okay, oni-chan?”

“How do you want to be prepared?” Jotaro simply asked through Star Platinum, who he had called some seconds ago, proceeding to explain at the clueless expression on his enemy face, pointing at him with one finger “Tell me which fish dish you want to become”

“Fish croquettes? Sashimi, maybe?” he give the options to him, challenging him and driving him to the edge “I’ll make sure to cook your Stand”

“What an idiot” the fake captain insulted him with a smirk, like he had already won “I know you are pretending to be tough, oni-chan, but, in reality, you are thinking: ‘How long will I resist underwater?’ “I may resist a couple of minutes but, what about him? Will he be able to resist more than me?’”

Once again, didn’t bother to answer the other, he just gave him a hard stare with his furrowed eyebrows as he watched him float up a bit.

“I will answer you” the man continued to say, not bothered by his lack of answer “My lungs’ capacity is three times the one of a normal person”

That information got him unguarded, letting out an involuntary surprised yelp from his throat that the other took to his advantage.
“I have trained them very well” he continued to brag about as the shadow of a ship started to loom over them “My record underwater is six minutes and twelve seconds! Just listening to that number must have made you feel dizzy and also…!”

The teal-blue eyed teen watched as the water Stand moved and crashed its fins with the ship’s engines, creating a mess in the waters and making them move violently around them.

“**Dark Blue Moon**’s fins are like underwater blades that move faster than the engines of a boat” the fake explained as the waters calmed down and revealed the damage done to the little fan “You should take a look to your Stand before feeling confident!”

Jotaro didn’t need anyone pointing him the obvious since he could see and feel the barnacles all over his arms even when they were on his Stand’s arm and spreading all over it, so his irritation increased a little more.

“The barnacles that I attached to it keep draining its energy” he continued as his Stand seemed to be hissing from behind “I know that you can feel yourself losing your strength”

“Are you trying to escape to the surface?” he also asked as he swam away “Just look around!”

With his enemy’s laugh imitating some type of background music, the black-haired teen was suddenly sucked into a whirlpool that made it difficult for his Stand to keep his pace as he tried to pull him to the surface, getting dragged by the sudden shift.

“Didn’t you notice that **Dark Blue Moon** was creating a whirlpool, oni-chan?” and the other continued, making Jotaro think about how satisfying would be once he hits him “Swim! Swim! You’ll only waste your oxygen and lose more energy!” he also deadpanned “But it will be too soon to kill a smug like you!”

♡

.“

“It’s been a long time! He hasn’t come out to the surface!” Joseph said the rest with worry tainted on his words as the group looked around to find Jotaro, who had taken way too much time to resurface.
“A whirlpool!” Avdol pointed at as he saw what called his attention some seconds ago “There is a giant whirlpool!”

“Where the hell is Jotaro?!” Polnareff asked franticly to the others as he tightly gripped the railing.

“We have to save him!” Noriko shouted, calling for her Hierophant Green as the rest did the same with their own Stands, making it throw itself towards the waters.

As one of Hierophant’s hands made contact with the water, cuts appeared in both Stand and user’s hands, dragging blood and making the redhead hiss in pain as she examined her hand before directing her view to her Stand’s one, finding something odd in it.

“T-Those are scales!” she shouted in shock, her mind working fast to join the dots together “That guy’s scales are like blades!”

“There is an infinity of scales spinning in that whirlpool” Avdol pointed out as he noticed some of them now that Noriko cut her hand “He wasn’t lying when he said that he could face the six of us. It’s like quicksand! It’s very likely that we die if we enter the water!”

“His scales?” Jotaro asked as he managed to catch some of the words the rest were saying, still spinning around in the whirlpool, earning himself some cuts on the cheeks that his Stand must have suffered.

“Now I’ll say what you are thinking in this moment: “Each whirlpool has a spot where there is no movement. It’s easy! The center. If I reach the center, I can attack him” the other said as he laughed and smirked, enjoying the show “That’s what are you thinking, right?” he asked him, clearly trying to taunt him and put him into action “If you think that you can hit me again, here I am… That useless Stand of yours is letting some simple barnacles drain his energy… Let’s see if you can throw an attack sharper than this marine blades, oni-chan!”
“Damn it, it would be very unwise to jump…” Avdol said in frustration, clearly resisting the urge to jump and help the younger.

Noriko, who had her violet eyes glued to the whirlpool to see any change, caught sight of something black in the middle of the crazy waves, making relief crash into her for a brief second “It’s Jojo! I could see Jojo in the whirlpool!”

“This is bad! He must be exhausted!” Polnareff said, watching the whirlpool.

“Exhausted you say? Are you saying that he isn’t resisting?” Joseph asked as he also watched the scene, rubbing his chin, deep in thought “That may be good!”

“What?” Avdol asked in confusion as he turned to look back at the older, the rest doing the same thing, clearly confused.

“Jotaro doesn’t do anything without a reason” Caesia took the lead to explain, more relaxed now that Noriko informed what she saw “He must have a plan”

“How dare you to say that you would turn me into Sashimi?!” the captain screeched with fury, clearly pissed off from earlier “The one who will end up sliced like Sashimi…”

Sadly for the enemy, when his Stand’s blades came close to Star Platinum, the Stand moved forward and managed to cut some of the barnacles around his hand, freeing two of his fingers.

“STAR FINGER!” Jotaro shouted, forcing his Stand to stretch said fingers and hit the water Stand
in the face full force, dragging blood and a choked sound from its user, making its head to explode.

“The one who ended up like a Sashimi was you” he told the other, watching as he bleed and choked some words “What did you say? I can’t hear you underwater, speak louder!”

“You pretended to be exhausted… To concentrate all your strength… In the tip of your fingers…” the man pathetically pointed out as he floated, still bleeding out from the hit “T-That was what you were thinking…”

“You’re wrong” he told the other, pulling the brim of his hat down to make sure it didn’t slip from his head, turning to fully face the man “I was thinking… That it will disgust me to be down here if you peed when I finished you off, old man”

The fake captain said nothing else as he sank down and into the deepest of the ocean, something Jotaro made sure of before swimming towards the surface, letting out and taking a deep breathe once his head broke the surface, right in front of the group and the ship.

“Jojo!” Noriko called for him, hearing a hint of relief in her words.

“That’s my grandson!”

“Our grandson!” his grandmother corrected his grandfather, shooting him a big and proud smile.

He just gave them a look and started swimming towards them, knowing that they would threw him something to lift him up and pull him back in the ship.

“Well done, Jotaro!” Joseph congratulated him with a life-savior under his arm, ready to throw it at him “Hurry up and-“

A loud sound interrupted them, making Jotaro stop and watch as the ship started to explode, while the rest looked around, keeping an eye to the situation above of him.

“The captain put bombs in the ship!” Polnareff shouted in panic “Goddamn it!”
“Go for the emergency boats!” Avdol urged the rest, hurrying them to leave.

“We will ask for help from a nearby boat!” his crazy grandfather shouted, roughly grabbing his grandmother by the wrist and started to pull her as the whole group dashed to the boats.

[STAND NAME] Dark Blue Moon

Power: C - Speed: C

Range: C - Durability: B

Precision: C - Growth Potential: D

[STAND MASTER] Impostor Captain Tennille

Miraculously, the group and the rest of the crew successfully managed to get to the boats before the fire and explosion destroyed them, successfully escaping from the trap the fake captain had pulled.

Sadly, night quickly took over the sky.

It was natural for Jotaro to quickly fall sleep first since the fight with the Stand user had taken a lot of effort and energy, letting the oceanic breeze lull him to sleep, not noticing when his head fell to the side and ended up in Noriko’s shoulder since they were sitting close to each other, with only a piece of wood separating them, unconsciously making Noriko move her head to rest above his, sleeping through the night while the rest of the group took turns in watching.

Eventually, all of them fell asleep, calling it for a night after two continuous days in their trip.
When Noriko started to stir and wake up, she didn’t expect to feel a weight on her shoulder, one that wasn’t the night before she fell asleep.

Moving her head a bit, she managed to catch sight of Jotaro, who had his head resting on her shoulder as he peacefully sleep as the waves rocked their boat, letting him sleep as much as he needed since it was the least she could do, letting her head fall back to his, closing her eyes to rest as much as she could.

“Drink some water” Joseph told the little girl as he offered his bottle of water “We already sent out distress signals, help should be on its way”

“I don’t understand what happened…” the girl said as she looked at the pair of teenagers with an odd look “Who the hell are you?”

“We are just simple travelers, just like you” Joseph simply explained, shifting a bit when he felt Caesia groan softly as she sleep supporting her head on his shoulder, hiding her face in the crock of his neck “You traveled to meet your father and we travel for my daughter’s well-being”

The girl started to drink from the bottle and looked at the side, spitting all the water she just drank in surprise at what her eyes just found.

“Hey! Water is a precious commodity!” Joseph scolded the girl, waking up Caesia in the process, who shot him a pissed off look which he ignored in favor to keep scolding the girl “How can you even think of spitting it out?!?”

“N-no!” the girl shouted as she stuttered “L-L-L-L-L-L-L-Look at that!”

All the ones that were sleeping woke up thanks to the shouting and turned to look at where the girl was pointing at, they gasped in shock at the sight of a huge cargo ship with a creepy aura all over it as it started to get close to them.

Chapter End Notes

I apologize if I was rude before but let me tell you that rewriting an anime isn't easy
and it's really tiring, keep that in mind when you want to complain about it with the author (•• - ••)

anyways, thank you so much for reading ❥
don't forget to leave a comment in the comment section to let me know if you liked it or if you want to leave a constructive criticism (/♡ o♡)/

remember that I love you all so freaking much and to stay back at home since your health and your family's one is really important ♡
see you next week ♡
In one of the rooms of the dark mansion located in some place in Egypt, the light of some candles illuminated the dark room, where three people stood.

The first was **DIO**, who stood shirtless in front of a full-body mirror in the room, admiring his form.

The second one was the old and small woman from before, who stood close to the blonde male, ready to do/say as whatever he said/wanted to hear.

And the last one was Johanna Joestar, who wore a red and fancy Victorian dress and held a worried look on her delicate features as she softly rocked a bundle of blankets inside her arms, holding it close to her chest as she stood behind the blonde.

“Enyaba... there is something I want to ask you...” his deep voice rumbled around the room as he
admire his reflection in the mirror “What is the meaning of life?”

“People live to accomplish their wishes...” the old woman, Enyaba, started to say as she scratched one arm and looked back at her Lord “In simple terms, that’s all” she concluded, laughing as she did “They wish money, fame, food, love and a couple…”

“Nonetheless, to achieve their wishes, they have to fight for them...” he concluded, giving his own conclusion to said matter “Am I wrong, Enyaba?”

“Exactly...”

“After losing a fight to get what they want, they feel the bitterness of failure and frustration… They feel hurt…” he stated as he turned around and towards his wife, taking joy in watching her body tremble as he approached her “And feel the fear of the next fight..”

Once in front of her, he placed a hand on her shoulder, right where her birthmark lay “To me… The meaning of life is conquering your fears..."

With a last smirk to the noirette, who unconsciously held the bundle of blankets closer to her chest as she shivered, a soft sound of complain came from them, making the vampire grin and place a hand above the blankets, caressing the soft black strands of hair that stood out from the cloth, calming down the little child wrapped in them before returning to stare at his reflection on the mirror, placing his hands on his hips.

“Who is at the top of the world, is someone who feel no fear” he resumed his talk with the old woman, stating his mind “Do you understand, Enyaba?”

“I was the one who told you about the existence of yours and your wife’s Stands and who taught you how to use it” the woman reminded him after a second of silence “Besides... You possess an immortal body… Is there something you can fear?”

“Maybe...” he mysteriously confessed, turning towards the stairs beside them.

“What worries you?”

“The Joestar lineage...” he said the name with neutrality but Johanna could feel the hate and
resentment in it, if her flinch and straightened tense form could be a sign that means something.

“The Joestars? Those two?” Enyaba incredulously asked “They are nothing more than trash! They are nothing compared to your Stand!”

“But still, the fact that they keep getting in my life… It only reinforces my belief that there is a destiny” he admitted, turning a sharp red-amber eye to look at the old woman “To be more precise… I don’t fear the Joestars” he remarked, looking back at the noirette woman, who shivered under his burning stare and clung the sheets even closer “But still… I can’t underestimate the ones of her lineage”

Something he did long ago and that almost cost him everything he wanted “I feel the need to rip the Joestars from the gears of my destiny…"

“Do you want to get rid of them personally because you believe that you shouldn’t underestimate them?”

“Yes” he lied.

“Nonsense!” the old woman shouted, furious by his reasoning “You shouldn’t take care of trivialities like those!” she claimed as she continued to screech “We have The Empress, The Hanged Man, Strength, Wheel of Fortune, The Temperance, The Emperor and The Devil, seven Stands at our disposal” she listed “You have no reason to take care yourself, Lord DIO!”

DIO let the woman laugh her irritating and rough laugh, going up to his room to take care of his carnal needs, leaving behind a distressed Johanna, who continued to softly rock the child inside her arms, her blue eyes, more alive than before, showing the signs of tears looked out for comfort on the tiny child as her mind ached for her descendants safety.

“A cargo ship!” one of the sailors within the Joestar group said as they all stared at the ship in awe.

“I didn’t see it coming!” another one said.
But Jotaro couldn’t feel the same relief the others were feeling as he kept his guard up and looked at the mysterious cargo ship that just arrived, something that his grandparents noticed.

“Jotaro, what’s the matter?” Caesia asked him, looking at him in wonder at his serious and tense form.

“What is worrying you?” Joseph asked with an arched eyebrow “It won’t be that you suspect that there may be another Stand user in that cargo ship, right?”

“No” he denied his grandfather’s question, dismissing his grandmother’s one in the way “I’m just wondering why no one has shown up even when they pulled down the access ramp”

That had the three Joestars deep in thought, considering that thought as their boat stopped in front of the ramp, watching as Polnareff jumped from their boat towards it.

“Someone took the time to rescue us!” the Frenchman scolded them as he looked at them from above his shoulder “It’s impossible that there’s no one on board!” he told them, staring back at their now frowned faces “Whether there are Stand users or not, I’ll get on the ship”

The rest of the group shared a look before reluctantly following after him, with Avdol going first, then Joseph who helped his wife into getting out from their boat, letting her go up after the other man, Jotaro was next, who caught Noriko when she was about to fall into the water due to a sudden shift in the waters, getting a “thank you” from her as she also went up but not noticing the blush on her cheeks, leaving the little girl behind.

“Give me your hand, I’ll help you climb” Jotaro offered his help and hand to the girl, but she just looked at it for a brief second before using the boat’s edge and jump towards Joseph’s arm, who caught her with his quick reflexes.

“Give me a break” he mumbled as he saw the girl sticking out her tongue to him, finally stepping up towards the top of the ship, following the others.
“What’s wrong with this ship?!” Joseph shouted as he stood with Jotaro and Noriko at each side at the entrance of the steering wheel house, with no one in sight “This place is empty!” he exclaimed as he walked inside the room, revealing the rest of the team that stood behind him “There’s also no operator in the communications room! There is no one!”

The rest watched him approach some of the machinery inside the room as they looked around to find something strange and out of place since it was odd that they hadn’t found no one.

“Still, look at this…” he said as he placed a hand below the compass of the room “All the gauges and machines work perfectly”

“Maybe all of them are in the bathroom because they got stomachache” Polnareff said, trying to give a logical (but still stupid) explanation to their current situation.

“Hey! Is anybody here?!” Joseph shouted, trying to find anyone who could answer his call.

“Guys, over here!” the girl told them as she pointed inside a room, calling for all their attention.

They looked at each other before going where the girl had pointed at, getting in and finding a cage, where a primate sat, who stared back at them with void eyes that made the two females in the group shiver as it looked at them due to the awful feeling it produced in their gut.

“It’s a monkey” the girl informed them as they watched it “There’s a monkey in that cage”

“It’s an orangutan” Noriko corrected the little girl, trying to put at bay the uncomfortable feeling the primate produced her on her gut.

“Who cares about that monkey?!?” Joseph snapped back, losing his cool for a minute “Let’s slip to find whoever has been feeding it”

With that, he grabbed his wife hand and pulled her out of the room, being followed by the teenagers and the little girl, who turned back in fear as she felt the weird look the orangutan on herself, running out of the room after seeing it staring at her and towards the rest of the group.
“Well?” Avdol asked the sailors as they examined one of the controls close to the steering wheel house, getting close to them so he could see what was wrong.

“It doesn’t seem to be decomposed but…” a sailor started to explain, looking for the right words to explain what was going on with the odd ship.

In that moment, the rest walked out of the room, approaching the rest of the travelers to get a hold of what was going on but the sudden stop Joseph pulled called their attention as a hook moved suspiciously above them, his mind racing quick as he saw it coming down.

“Avdol! That sailor is in danger!” he shouted in warning but it turned to be too late as the hook fell lose and pierced the sailor from the back of his head to the front, lifting his dead body up as the hook mysteriously came back to its previous place.

Acting by instinct, Noriko quickly covered the girl’s eyes as she screamed in shock and fear, her sight quickly getting obscured by bigger hands covering her sight from the horrible scene.

“Give me a break” Jotaro sighed behind the girls as he kept his eyes glued to the scene “A welcome sight like this one is unsuitable for a girl”

“B-But nobody touched it!”

“There was no one! That hook moved without anyone operating it!”

“The hook pierced him by its own!”

“Careful!” Joseph shouted, calling for everyone else’s attention so he could give his warning “There is definitely someone in the ship!” at that, he turned to warn the crew “Hey! Don’t get close
to the machinery!"

“If it moves or works with electricity, don’t even think about touching it!” he told them “If you want to live, listen to me” he added to get them to understand how serious they had to be “Don’t leave the cabins till we say so!”

The crew seemed to understand since they gave them a nod with the head and headed to the place where the cabins were supposed to be as the little girl followed after them, reluctantly as she gave them side looks whenever she turned to look back.

Once they were alone, the six of them formed a circle to get their thoughts sorted with Joseph as the head and leader of the group.

“Did anyone could see a Stand?”

“No…” Polnareff confessed.

“I apologize…” Avdol said as he closed his eyes “Even when I was close to the hook, I couldn’t feel anything”

“It seems that either the Stand user is too smart or too fast” Caesia concluded as she looked at the other five, getting a nod from all of them “I doubt the first so it will be better if we search for it”

“Good” Noriko agreed as she directed the attention of the rest to her “I’ll have Hierophant Green inspect the place”

With that, the feminine looking Stand manifested itself behind the redhead girl and jumped into one of the cracks on the floor, slowly disappearing till the only trace that was left behind was its long green-white tail.

♡

“I don’t know what the hell is going on, but bad things happen whenever they are” the little girl, whose name is Anne, told herself as she watched the group as she rested part of her weight in the
door from where she was looking at them “Could they be gods of bad fortune? I have heard of people who brings catastrophes to the ones that surrounded them”

“I have to stay away from them” she told herself, a little uncertain “Could it be true?”

She must have been deep in thought since she was a little startled when she noticed everyone else staring at her as the older couple started to walk towards her.

Having to option left, she let go of the door and turned to face them both, patiently watching as they crouched to be close to her height since they were far too taller than her.

“There is only one thing we can tell…” the man, Mr. Joestar, told her with a soft smile, one that reminded her of her own grandfather “We are at your side”

“We won’t let anyone hurt you” the blonde, Mrs. Joestar, promised her, giving her a beautiful smile that made her feel warm and comfortable with her “I promise you that”

“Try to stay close to the others” Mr. Joestar told her, a little too soft to be an order but it didn’t lose its intention.

“Okay” she greed with them before she rushed inside to catch with the crew.

Later than sooner, when the sun was setting, Hierophant Green finally returned to the group, coming out of a drainage before disappearing, leaving its user with a bitter taste on her tongue.

“This is absurd” Noriko said in frustration as she cupped her chin “Hierophant Green searched and checked the entire ship but found no signal of other people” she informed with frustration “We checked each crack and duct with no result!”

The girl really felt frustrated for not having found anything and felt like that even more when she heard the huff Jotaro gave, but she decided to relax and remind herself that it was better if she stayed calm than if she started to feel guilty.
Before she could do something else, she felt a hand on her shoulder and immediately looked back to find Caesia giving her a little smile, patting her shoulder a little when she felt how tense she was as she pulled her away from the rest of the group.

“You did all you could, Kakyoin” she assured her with her smile never leaving her face “Why don’t you go and check how our little companion is doing? I bet she must be causing a ruckus if what we saw in the ship was her real personality”

At that, the redhead chuckled, making the light blonde to grin at her successful attempt to make her relax, considering the option as a very possible one, neither of them, noticing the look certain black-haired teen was giving them.

“I guess you are right, Mrs. Joestar” she told her as she shot her a little smile “I think I could use the distraction and check on her”

“No need to thank me, dear” the blonde told the younger with a bigger smile “I saw you sweating for the effort you put on your Stand so it’s the least I could do for you”

That was one of the things Kakyoin Noriko liked about Caesia Joestar.

She could tell better than anyone else how one of them was feeling right away by just observing the person and noticing their actions or words, something that Noriko could see her using around Jotaro, since he didn’t snap or shout at her, treating her with all the respect in the world that he could muster.

She could see that the blonde was a woman that said and acted when she felt it was needed or right, not pushing people to do what she thought was right, leaving them to do what they wanted, something she saw her doing with her own husband, making her feel curious about who Caesia Joestar was.

“Well, I guess I will get going then” the redhead said as she snapped herself out of her thoughts “I’ll send Hierophant Green in case something bad happens”

“Alright, dear”

With a last smile, she turned and left, going to look for the little girl and maybe take a bath since she hadn’t showered and she was feeling quite disgusting.
Eventually, and with the help of her Stand, Noriko found the girl in the shower room, making her feel as if she had won the lottery.

As she passed, she saluted the sailors that were trying to use the communication system before going inside the other room, closing the door quickly when she noticed that the girl was changing her clothes to get into the shower.

Deciding to have fun and tease the girl, she silently stood behind her and touched her shoulder, making her give a scream as she jumped to look back at her with daggers on her eyes.

“Don’t do that!” the girl scolded her with a pout on her face.

“Sorry, sorry” she apologized as she tried to keep her giggles at bay but failed to contain the grin that crossed her face “I just wanted to check on you and take a shower, so I guess I got the double prize”

The redhead saw the girl suppressing the grin at her words but could see her failing as she shot her one when she gave up.

“Okay you win” the girl told her with her own grin “It was lame but you won”

“Let’s go shower” she said as she started to undo her top’s ribbon and took it off, doing the same with her skirt, shoes and socks, neatly folding the clothes and putting them in a place where they wouldn’t get wet.

Stepping inside the hot water, Noriko started humming to the rhythm of a song, washing her hair as best as she could while she heard the girl do the same, but both females failed to notice the sound of the door opening as someone stepped inside the room, and Noriko only noticed it when she heard the little girl’s screaming.
Meanwhile, Jotaro, who had gotten a strange feeling on his gut since Noriko left, decided to go to check by himself the two girls, not bothering to listen nor pay attention when he heard his grandmother telling him about the redhead sending her Stand if she had any trouble.

Following his instincts, he ended up right in the room where the noirette girl had found the orangutan and called for them to see it, finding the cage completely open with no trace of the animal, just a Playboy magazine laying inside of it.

“What’s wrong?!” Noriko immediately asked as she quickly grabbed her towel and wrapped it around her body, not bothering to close the water as she stepped outside, coming across a scene that disgusted her.

In front of her, the orangutan from before stood in front of where the young girl was taking a shower, having dragged the curtain away as it moved an arm close to the girl as he started to corner her.

As fast as she could, she summoned Hierophant Green and made one of its tendrils to wrap around the primate to pull it away from the terrified girl, successfully doing so but unfortunately calling its attention to her, who gave her a lustful look that made her cringe in disgust but she still prepared herself to attack as her violet eyes watched it charge at her while it licked its lips.
Noriko was well-aware that her Stand wasn’t made for physical confrontations, but it was skilled in being silent and fast so she wasn’t worried when it was a matter of seconds before the orangutan launched and came for her since she had positioned her Stand to grab it and prevent it from touching her but it still was a relief when a deep voice echoed inside the room that she knew very well.

“Hey!”

She saw the primate drop to the ground as it bled when something hard hit it in the back of its head, making it crawl away as Jotaro stood behind him, holding a bloody padlock in one hand as his deep teal-blue eyes locked with her amethyst ones.

“Jojo!” she shouted in relief, glad that he was there before things got out of her hand.

They silently looked back at each other in the eye, and Noriko could see the unsaid question swimming back and forth in them so she gave him a reassuring smile, receiving a nod before he turned to face the orangutan while the little noirette girl ran to her and hid her face on her flat stomach as Jotaro stood in front of them.

“Don’t forget your lock” he told it before he threw the said object at it, hitting it right in the face but received a deadly grip on his coat, making him look down at the primate’s hand with a frown on his face “This primate… It’s not at all common… Wouldn’t it be…?”

But Jotaro wasn’t able to complete his question as the primate threw one of his legs at him, being stopped in time by Star Platinum’s powerful fist but was suddenly stabbed in the shoulder by one of the ceilings fans that Noriko had noticed making an odd path till it had collided with the other teen.

“Was he the one who ripped the ceiling fan?” Jotaro asked as blood came out of his new wound and the primate laughed “He is the Stand user but, where is his Stand? Why can’t we see it?”

“What? Did the propeller bended itself?” she heard Jotaro ask himself as she saw in horror as he was slapped right in the face by the object, leaving blood on his way out as he was sent flying backwards by the force of the hit.

“Jojo!” Noriko and the girl screamed for him as he quickly left the room.

“What is this?” she heard him as he stared at the primate, who seemed euphoric for what just
happened before jumping to follow the boy.

Gripping tight her towel, Noriko turned to the girl “Get dress and grab my stuff, I’m gonna try to help him!”

Without waiting for an answer, she rushed out of the room and towards the fight.

“Once again, a window broke without me seeing the Stand” Jotaro told himself as he witnessed it while he kept flying backwards from the force of the previous hit and towards the broken glasses so he called out for his Stand “Star Platinum!”

“AGH!” his Stand cried out as he caught the broken glasses between his fingers, turning to hit the orangutan once he had caught them all “ORA!”

But to both Stand and Stand user surprise, Star Platinum only managed to hit the wall behind the primate, who somehow managed to blend with it till it disappeared, leaving the teenagers by themselves in the hallway since Noriko had managed to catch with them.

“What is that thing?” he asked out loud, as he stepped in front to shield Noriko from the disgusting animal “That ape went through the wall and disappeared!” at that, he looked above his shoulder to look back at her “You saw it too, right?”

“Y-Yeah!” she replied, looking a little shocked by what they just had witnessed “Jojo, I think he--“

“Stay close” he interrupted her as he looked around “Something horrible is going to happen”

“That ape went through the wall… he has to be a Stand user” he thought to himself as he looked at Noriko while she looked around to find the ape and he did the same, staying high on alert “When I touched him with my hand, I could feel the energy of a Stand so why can I see it?”
His mind raced back in time and felt as if something pulled an exact thought that to him and flashed like Christmas lights in front of his eyes.

“Nonetheless… If I’m already watching it, that means that…”

Before he could warn Noriko, a loud sound of an explosion echoed all over the place, making him lose balance for a second as he felt her smaller hand clinging to his arm for dear life to keep herself upwards, accidently flushing her body against his.

“What is going on?!” Avdol asked in panic at the rest of his partners as the four of them sank and blended with the ship’s floor before they could do something to avoid it.

“No!” Joseph protested as he and Caesia held each other tight to not fall face first to the floor with the ship’s sudden moves.

“This is…” Polnareff tried to say as the half of his body was trapped.

“This cargo ship?” Joseph asked out loud “It won’t be that the ship is…”

“The cargo ship is its Stand!” Jotaro stated as he and Noriko used each other as their support, but it didn’t last long as some pipes grabbed him from behind and drew him away from the redhead, making his back collide really hard against a wall.
“Jojo!” Noriko shouted for him and went to help him as he and his Stand struggled to break free from the grip.

“N-No!” he denied her help to prevent her from getting trapped.

He saw as Hierophant Green manifested behind her, but his relief didn’t last long as some pipes wrapped all over it, pulling it to the ground hard, making Noriko suffer the same fate as she hit the ground hard.

“Oh! Absolutely everything!” Joseph shouted in horror as his and Caesia’s body were half way down “The ship is a giant Stand!”

“This ship?!” Polnareff choked out as he was half chest down “Then, are there Stands that can be seen by people like the little girl and the sailors?”

“I dare to say that it’s due to its presence and energy being vast and powerful” Avdol choked out as he also was half way down “E-Even though, it requires an incredible power to manage a Stand so huge like this one”

“We have to contact Jotaro and Noriko!” Caesia told the rest as she struggled to avoid sinking in even more.

“We can’t” Joseph answered his wife as he also struggled to stop sinking “Noriko is the only one who possess a Stand with long range”

“I guess there is nothing we can do” Polnareff deadpanned since he was the one who was the deepest “He has completely trapped us!”

“T-The pressure is rising…” Avdol choked out as the pressure crushed them more “Our bodies won’t be able to resist it for long… We-we will be…”
“W-We were careless…” Joseph also choked out as blood came out from the corners of his mouth by the crushing pressure on his chest, letting his head fall into Caesia’ shoulder as they hoped for the best.

Jotaro and Noriko, from their respective tied positions, watched in shock as the orangutan came back from one of the walls, this time wearing a captain’s coat and hat, presenting them a dictionary where he pointed out at a specific word with his fingers.

The world he was pointing at was *Strength*, the name of his Stand, a word that meant force, energy, power, aid, strong, powerful, intensity, firmness and was also the eighth card of the Tarot.

Represents the challenges, a strong will and hidden instincts!

His user… *Forever!*

Violet and teal-blue eyes watched as their enemy started playing with a Rubik’s cube while it laughed, irritating Jotaro, who willed Star Platinum to grip one of the pipes that held him back, successfully ripping it just to be pinned back as two more pipes wrapped around his muscular arm.

“This ape thinks that he already won” Jotaro told himself as he watched it laugh like an idiot before it crushed the cube in its hand and turned to look back at Noriko with a lustful look, who had her arms pinned to the ground by a bunch of pipes.
A deeper and more intense rage came to him as he saw it start approaching the redhead, whose towel was slowly coming lose around her chest area, showing more and more skin of her breasts while water drops started to appear all over her arms as her red strands stuck on her face, clearly trying to take advantage of her.

When he freed two of his fingers, he put all his strength into them as he touched one of the buttons of his coat and threw to the orangutan’s neck, successfully dragging its attention from the girl to the button as it bounced on the ground.

“That button isn’t part of your Stand” he told it as he watched it pick the button up, witnessing how he came from normal to tremble with rage “Are you angry?” he asked it with amusement “That means I wounded your pride because you believed that you had won”

“No, I didn’t hurt it…” he quickly denied as the thought came to his mind “Because apes don’t have pride!”

With more amusement, he kept watching him as it screeched in rage and jumped to attack him, sealing its destiny.

“That’s what makes you an ape” he reminded it with a neutral look “What I will hurt will be… your head!”

Using Star Platinum’s stretched fingers, Jotaro commanded him to snap the button from the ape’s fingers, throwing the golden button to its head and piercing its head, making it screech in pain as it fell to the ground and held onto its wounded forehead.

Feeling the Stand weakened, he simple moved forwards and ripped the pipes, going to stand close to Noriko, who ripped her own pipes away with her Stand and stood as she rearranged her towel to save her dignity, both of them looking down at the screaming animal.

“Give me a break” he sighed as they both watched it stood up and backout towards one corner, trembling in fear before it ripped open its coat to show its stomach.

“I understand that animals show their stomach when they recognize defeat… Do you want us to forgive you?” he asked the ape as he pulled down his hat, giving a side look to the redhead beside him, suppressing a smirk when the ape nodded its head “What do you think, Noriko? Should we forgive it?”

Noriko didn’t answer right away, she just looked at him by the corner of her eye and smirked before sending Hierophant Green’s tendrils towards the animal, holding it in place as it cried out, totally desperate “No”
“You surpassed the limits of what they make you an animal…” he directed himself and the animal as it tried to wriggle out of the hold, not bothering to hide his smirk “And you heard her, so forget about it”

Calling quickly for Star Platinum, they both watched as the warrior Stand pulverized the ape as satisfaction took a great hold of Jotaro once Hierophant Green let go of its grip and his Stand sent it backwards and away from them, unconscious.

Their satisfaction was cut short since the ship started to violently twist and shake due to its user being unconscious, losing its strength and making both of them stumble against each other, resulting in Jotaro gripping Noriko’s wide hips while she grabbed both of his biceps as his back hit a wall from the unstable movement, receiving all of Noriko’s front to his chest, feeling her erratic breathing against the skin of his neck as he breathed against her hair.

They stayed liked that for a couple of seconds before they were interrupted by the girl, who came out of the room with Noriko’s clothing in one hand and completely changed.

“The ship is squirming!” she told them but stopped dead on her tracks as she saw them so close, breaking the little spell they had as Noriko let go of him and stepped back.

“Hey, keep your astonishment for later” he told the girl as he recovered his cool and pulled down the brim of his hat “This ship will sink” he informed the two females with his back turned them “We will get out of here in the boats we came”

“You two go ahead” Noriko told them as she stretched one arm to receive her things to change, who the girl gave back her clothes after she came out of her shock “I’ll try to catch you guys as fast as I can after I change”

Once again, both of them locked eyes before he gave her a nod and started to walk away, followed by the noirette girl, giving the redhead enough time to change as fast as she could with the help of her Stand and dash after them in time.

By miracle, the six of them plus the girl sat in one of the boats they had come from as the only survivors of the Stand’s attack, watching as it slowly disintegrated and was reduced to nothing.
“I-I can’t believe it!” the girl commented for all of them as they watched the scene “The ship is changing its form! Its transforming into a little boat!”

“It’s incredible…” Avdol said as he tried to recover from their face to face encounter with a Stand of such magnitude “That monkey used its Stand to find us in high seas… What a terrifying power… It’s the first time I see energy like this one”

“He completely surpassed us” Joseph confessed as he let Caesia whip away the blood in the corner of his lips “If it wasn’t for Jotaro, he would have killed us all…”

Hearing that and giving a sigh, Noriko started to comb her hair with her eyes closed and a hairbrush she had on her skirt’s pockets, wishing that they could reach any hotel in their next destination since her last one didn’t grant her the chance to do it properly, not noticing Jotaro’s stare on her as he placed one of his cigarettes between his lips.

“Besides, I wonder if we will keep crossing paths with powers as strange as those” Joseph voiced his thoughts out loud, looking a little lost as he blankly stared at his wife’s face, who caressed his cheek with her thumb before letting his face go.

“Do you want gum?” Polnareff asked the couple as he held a packet to them, receiving a soft “no” from the blonde.

“Once again adrift…” Avdol lamented as he leaned back as much as he could and crossed his arms on his chest.

“Give me a break, my cigarettes got wet” Jotaro complained as he pulled out from his lips the cigarette he just turned on.

“You will have a lot of time to dry them under the sun, Jojo” the Frenchman teased the younger, receiving a look from him as he pulled down the brim of his hat.

“We can only hope to be rescued to reach Singapore” Joseph said, trying to calm the rest down.

“We left Japan four days ago…” Noriko commented with frustration tainting her voice as she
twirled her curly and long bang, thinking about Jotaro’s mother back in Japan, wishing with all her might that they could reach Egypt in time.

♡

[STAND NAME] Strength

Power: B - Speed: D

Range: D - Durability: A

Precision: E - Growth Potential: E

[STAND MASTER] Forever

“It seems that Strength was defeated” Enyaba informed DIO as he sat in one of the armchairs in the room with Johanna seated on his lap while he read a book, with the light of the burning candle beside them as their only light source.

“But don’t worry!” she shouted to say, “The six remaining Stand users are very powerful! And one of them is my son!”

At that, a smirk appeared on his face as Johanna unconsciously shivered at the mention of Enyaba’s son, making him kiss her naked shoulder with fervor since all she was wearing was an almost transparent nightgown that left nothing to the imagination and hugged her body in all the right places.

“The right arm of my son will take care of them” Enyaba laughed, probably showing her two right hands as she stood behind them.

“Hmph…” he said in amusement as he closed his book “You are very strange old woman…” he "praised" her as he rearranged Johanna’s body on his lap so she was sitting above his dick,
successfully moving her underwear aside and lifting the ends of the nightgown to make room to himself “What do you want?”

“I have already told you so many times…” Enyaba reminded him with a weird voice “I just want to stay at your side...” he continued as he put his book aside and entered the warm heat of Johanna’s body, feeling her shiver as his naked chest pressed against her warm half clothed back “Your guardian spirit is incredibly powerful...”

Not bothering to keep up with the talk, DIO gripped the noirette's wide hips and started to softly bounce her on his lap as he dug his nails in the skin he was holding, enjoying her soft and sweet mewls as they remained connected while his Stand stood beside them, a little transparent as he watched them connected as one and ready to strike however dared to interrupt them.

“Our ability to avoid danger and your strange life are also due to it...” the old woman continued, not bothered by the scene in front of her as the back of the armchair protected the "love making" of the two lovers “I want to see how your life develops! That’s all…”

.
.
.

The next morning, after being effectively saved, the Joestar group stood in the streets of Singapore, close to the hotel they planned to stay the day to recover from the fights they had faced the five days that had passed.

“Good heavens… We are finally here” Polnareff dramatically breathed in relief.

“We will stay the night in a hotel to later define our rote to Egypt” Joseph informed the rest, receiving nods of affirmation before he pointed at a large and expensive hotel “We will stay in that hotel”

What they didn’t know was that in one of the rooms, the one with the 912 number in the door, a little doll sat in the nightstand close to the bed with a dark aura all over it…

Chapter End Notes
I hope you guys had had a nice week and, if not, I hope that I had managed to make your weekend a little bit better with this update (• - •)

I know that it's difficult but please, don't forget to follow the instructions given by your government so you can all continue being healthy and to look out for your family's one

remember that I love you and that I'm very grateful for the love you have been giving this series, this fic and me ♡

I wouldn't be here if it weren't for you, my lovely babies (/飞船/)/
also, don't forget to leave your thoughts down below to let me know what you guys think ♡

take care and see you next week (• - •)
The Devil

Chapter Summary

He won't stop until he destroys you all...

Chapter Notes

♡ before reading ♡

annyeong, readers! (/♡・ω・∠)ﾉ/

finally, it's Friday! which means another TROTS' chapter! (つ'ω'c)

I have been DYING to update this one since it has A LOT going on in the last two parts of the whole episode so pay attention to it (■・♭・■)

also, I want to remind you that the plot I'm following it's the anime's one, which means that everything it's going to take its sweet time to arrive so I beg you to be patient with how I'm managing everything and how long it will take to finish it (・・ -・・)

if you are bothered that I'm copying what we saw in the anime let me remind you too that what I place as original material from my part is little at times and huge in other times for how much I have to cover (・〜〜・■)

it's not romance the only thing that I'm focused on (even tho it's the most significant part on the whole series), it's about tragedy and the family curse our beloved characters are dealing with (つ'ω'c)

now that I hope you have understood, let's get going! (・・ -・・)

ENJOY ♡

See the end of the chapter for more notes

The Joestar group, now in Singaporean lands and after deciding where they would crash in for the night, started walking in group towards the hotel, only to be stopped by a whistle that sounded behind them, forcing them to turn back to see an officer running towards their group.

“Hey you!” the officer shouted as he pointed at Polnareff “I’m talking to you!” he continued, making the Frenchman point at himself, confused by his attitude “You threw garbage to the ground, didn’t you?! You just won yourself a fine of five-hundred Singapore dollar!”

“What?” Polnareff asked, confused and clueless of what the man in front of him was referring to
“Five-hundred?”

“In Singapore it’s illegal to threw garbage to the ground! I will have to fine you!” the officer explain but continued to press the matter at hand.

“Five-hundred Singapore dollar…” Noriko mumbled as she took into the quantity, calculating how much it would cost the Frenchman.

“That’s for about forty-thousand yens…” Joseph completed, giving a pitiful look to the other.

“Garbage?” Avdol asked, equally confused as Polnareff.

“Is that clear?!” the officer continued to shout at the Frenchman, ignoring the confused expression on his face.

“Garbage?” Polnareff asked, raising an eyebrow to confirm if he heard right since he didn’t remember throwing anything “What are you talking about?”

Following the officer’s hand to see where he was pointing at, he fought really hard to keep his own laugh as he listened the way Avdol choked to stop himself from laughing, shooting a smirk to him “All I see is my luggage…”

He enjoyed the man’s horrified expression and the embarrassment in it as he got closer, jabbing him with a finger “Can you tell me about the garbage you are talking about?” he requested, giving him a wicked grin as he placed a hand on his shoulder “Where is the garbage, officer?”

“Is that your luggage…?” the officer nervously asked in a tin tone of voice, clearly terrified by the silver-haired man now that he realized his mistake.

“Exactly” he confirmed with his smirk intact.

“I’m so sorry, sir” the officer apologized, making the group laugh loud and hard at the ridiculous scene they just had witnessed.

They laughed and stopped when they heard a childish laugh, turning to look at their side where they heard the laugh to see the girl from before, making her stop laughing when she realized she
was the only one doing so, huffing and looking away as she saw them staring at her.

“Well, I think that I will go now…” the officer said before running away for dear life, Polnareff shushing him away with the hand.

“And what is wrong with her?” Polnareff asked the rest, giving an annoyed look as the six of them watched the girl “Why is she still following us?”

“Hey, weren’t you going to see your father?” Joseph asked the kid as she sat down, subtly trying to get her away from them due to the nature of their trip.

“Why don’t you stop following us from once and leave?” the silver-haired man told her, not wanting to deal with a normal child when they had different Stand users after their backs.

“I’ll meet him in five days” she told them in a huff, looking bored “I can do whatever I want till then! I won’t receive orders from any of you”

At her words, Jotaro gave a huff of air before looking back at Noriko and walked to her so he was standing beside her, who seemed to be deep in thought as she must be trying to find a way to tell her off, missing the kicked puppy look the noirette girl gave him as she also pouted when she saw him looking at the redhead.

.♡
.♡

“She will be in danger if she stays with us” Avdol expressed as they tried to find a way to get rid of the girl to not put her in danger.

“Maybe she doesn’t have any money” Noriko tried to reason, but her unsure tone gave her away.

“We might get away from her before we leave to our next destination” Caesia suggested, trying to give a solution to their sudden added problem to the infinite list of issues they were facing.
“Fine…” Joseph reluctantly agreed with his bulky arm crossed over his chest as he looked at the girl by the corner of his eyes “We can pay her hotel stay” he stated, looking back at the Frenchman “Polnareff, make sure she comes with us, but made sure to not hurt her pride”

“Alright…” the said man agreed with them as he flashed them a winning smile before he approached the girl.

“He is going to fail, isn’t he? Caesia asked out loud enough to the rest, making Joseph snore as he suppressed his laugh and the rest fought the threatening smile that was taking their features.

“Yes… He will” Noriko confirmed with a nod of her head that made her curly bang to bounce, making the rest break into laughing and the corner of Jotaro’s lips twitched.

“Hey! You are poor, aren’t you?” Polnareff asked to the girl once he was close to her “We will take care of you so come with us…”

But the girl ignored him as she huffed, making Joseph place two finger on his forehead at the other’s stupidity while Noriko and Caesia laughed and high fived each other as Avdol gave a sigh.

“Well, let’s register…” the Egyptian suggested the rest as he started to walk towards their first destination.

“Y-Yeah…” Joseph accepted, moving to drop his arm all over Caesia’s shoulders as they followed after the other, with the rest following them.
Once inside the hotel and the reception, Joseph and Caesia went to the front desk to ask for a big room so all of them could be safe and stay in the same place, but it seemed that the place run out of them due to all the people around.

“I’m sorry sir, but we have a lot of guests in this season” the kind receptionist apologized and informed as Joseph signed to pay for the rooms “You will have to stay in separate room, is that alright?”

“I guess we don’t have any other option” he said as he returned the pen to the young woman “About the rooms…” he started to say as he turned to the rest, as he counted how many rooms he had booked and how many they were “Caesia and I can share a bed and room with Avdol…”

He paused, waiting for the other’s opinion, receiving a nod from the head as he turned to look at the others “I don’t know about you…”

Polnareff seemed to be waiting for that chance as he looked at Noriko and gave her a grin, making her reach for the little girl and drag her back at her, looking straight into his eyes to tell him off and take the hint “The girl and I will share since both of us are girls”

At her words, the Frenchman clearly deflated and pouted, before changing his expression resembling a kicked puppy before he looked at Jotaro with a big grin on his face, who gave him a sharp stare as he noticed his change of attitude “I guess you and I will have to share, Jojo~”

“Good grief” Jotaro mumbled under his breath, pulling the brim of his hat down to avoid looking at the energetic man as the rest picked up their respective keys.

“Let’s go” Polnareff told them as he picked up his own key and walked ahead of them “We hadn’t had break since we left Hong Kong and I really want to shower in the room’s security”

The rest laughed for the silver-haired man’s eccentricities and followed behind him.
“See ya!” Polnareff told the rest as he went ahead to his and Jotaro’s room, parting from the rest and suppressing a grin that threatened to slip on his face as he saw the latter follow both Noriko and the little girl that stuck with them, sharing a knowing look with the remaining three before going up to the room.

Once in front of it, he opened the door and went inside, listening the door screech as he went inside, making sure that his steps echoed around the silent room, checking the bathroom before going to the terrace after throwing his keys to one of the nightstands, one that had a doll seated in it as he dropped his bag.

“I should have known… That they wouldn’t even let us rest…” he said in a resigned breathe before he turned his whole body to face the mini-bar in the room when he felt a presence coming from it “Get out of there”

He patiently waited for his newfound enemy got out of the little place, calmly watching as the little door creaked as a native-American man with a menacing aura came out from it, making weird and impossible moves as his whole frame came out and stood in front of him.

“What a murderous aura you display…” he told the other “Why don’t you tell me your name before I kill you?”

“My name is Devo and my Stand corresponds to the Devil’s card” the man, Devo, presented himself “It represents the influence of a curse, the deterioration of mental health and a route to complex conflicts” he explained, giving off a smirk but holding curiosity on his eyes “How did you know that I was in the mini-bar?”

“Hey…” Polnareff told him as he grabbed him and turned them around so the other was giving his back to the terrace “Are you stupid?!” he asked him, not believing how stupid the other was “You pulled out all the mini-bar’s contents without bothering to hide them!”

To his surprise, the man smirked so he let him go as he sensed something weird.

“EBONY EVIL!” Devo shouted, calling for his Stand.

“SILVER CHARIOT!” the silver-haired man called for his own, throwing it forward and stabbing him in the eye, tongue and forehead, dragging blood and a choked complain from the other.
What he didn’t notice was a black smoke that went from the man to the doll as also blood passed through.

“How pathetic…” he mocked as he drew back his Stand and crossed his arms over his chest “The ape from the other day was stronger and more intimidating than you”

He was smiling in triumph and had his eyes closed, but quickly opened them when he felt movement and saw the man standing up as he covered his bloody eye.

“You really messed up, Polnareff!” Devo shouted at him with difficulty and a wild look on his face “How dare you do this to me?!?” he screeched and started laughing as a maniac “Hurts! It hurts so much!”

“What’s wrong with this one?” Polnareff asked himself with wide eyes as he watched the other stumbled back in shaky legs and continued to laugh.

“It hurts!” his enemy screeched again and kept walking backwards, leaving drops of blood on his way back as he reached the terrace while he laughed “I curse you…” he managed to say before he choked once again and threw his head backwards “How dare you?! How dare you do this to me?!?”

Unconsciously, he stretched a hand when he saw him close to the railing, but managed to do mid-air before the other could take advantage of it and pulled it down.

“You don’t know how much I resent you now!” Devo continued to say as he pointed at him with a finger “This agony… An agony like this one won’t go unpunished!” he screeched as he kept walking backwards “I let you find me and attack me on purpose!”

As fast as he came as fast he went since, with those last words, Devo fell backwards and towards the street, freezing Polnareff on his spot as he reacted only when he heard the sound of something crashing so he rushed forwards, stopping his body into the railing as he looked down but found no one in the street nor no one screaming their lungs out in fear.

“H-He is not…!” he mumbled as he gave a good look around but found no one “He disappeared?!?” he asked himself “What’s going on?!”
Unbeknown to him, something small and fast came rushing to him, quickly slicing something sharp on his leg, ripping a big slice of his skin and making blood flow from the wound as he screamed in pain.

“I can’t believe it! When did he attacked me?!” he shouted as pain shot all over his wounded leg “I don’t think I felt that attack coming” he told himself as he crouched to check the wound “No, I’m certain that I didn’t feel it…”

Wincing in pain as he stood and wincing even more as he walked, he managed to reach the bed where he let go of his weight and sat down on it, reaching for the phone to call the first person he thought of.

“Hello?”

“Mr. Joestar! There is a Stand user in the room!” he immediately informed as he recognized the voice as he grabbed a piece of cloth and wrapped his injured leg.

“You mistake me for him, Polnareff…”

“Wait! Avdol?!” he asked in confusion, not bothering to address his mistake as the situation at hand was more important “Well, listen to me! I can’t explain it very well, I don’t know if its strong or fast, b-but its repulsive!”

“Where it is?!”

“It escaped…” he confessed as he tried to tie the cloth to stop the bleeding with both hands as he used his shoulder to keep the telephone in place so he could continue speaking “God dammit! What’s going on?!”

“Polnareff…”

“Don’t let your guard down!” he snapped to warn them “He cut my foot out of nowhere!”

What he didn’t notice was that the doll from before, hiding below the bed, held a shaving blade in
one of his tiny hands, ready to act when it pleased.

“Devo and the Devil’s card?!” Avdol shouted in panic as he listened to the Frenchman while Caesia and Joseph looked back at him after sharing a look “Are you sure that was what he told you?”

“Yes” Polnareff said with exasperation “No matter how many times I replay it, it doesn’t make sense” he confessed “I know I managed to see his Stand for a moment, but without any signal of having been attacked, a cut appeared on my leg”

Feeling something below his foot, he dragged it out and looked down at it, finding the doll from before that sat on his nightstand some minutes ago “I’ll be there in five” he said, “Room 1212 in the twelfth floor, right?”

“Y-Yeah...”

“Tell Kakyoin and Jotaro” he added to finish the call “See ya!”

Hanging the first call and waiting for no answer, he dialed the next number as he picked up the doll.

“Good evening, reception”

“Hello? Room service?” he asked as he moved the doll on his hands and examined it “I hurt my leg... Could you bring me some analgesics and bandages?” he requested “It’s Polnareff from room 912”
“Understood” the man speaking said, receiving the order “We will go right away”

Finishing the conversation, he hung the phone and placed the doll beside it, stretching his legs all over the bed, looking down at his leg and almost regretting it when he noticed something that got him cringing.

“I’m such an idiot…” he scolded himself in frustration as he hit his forehead “I ended up wrapping the wound with my dirty underwear” he pointed out “God damnit…”

After Avdol informed the couple what Polnareff had just told him, he patiently waited as the two took hold of what they were informed.

“Do you know who was the one who attacked Polnareff, Avdol?” Joseph asked him as he held a mug his wife just passed him.

“Yes” he revealed with a nod of his head “Devo, a murderer that pretends to be a simple native American healer” he stated as he turned to look at them “But he is also scary Stand user…”

“Mafias, armies and politicians from all over the world seek to hire him” he informed, turning his body to face them “I saw Devo once and he was covered in wounds” he added “That’s because his strategy consist in inciting his opponent to harm him and later he uses the power of his resentment to control his Stand” he finished to add more details of their current enemy “That’s how he generates the illusion that his opponents were killed by a curse”

“Then… Polnareff fell in his game?” Joseph asked with a serious look on his face.

“Sadly… Yes…”

“What type of Stand does he have?” he asked again, putting down his mug.
“No one knows…” Avdol admitted “Everyone who had faced him has been murdered”

A that, Joseph made a sound with his throat as he started to think while Caesia put down her own and looked at them.

“So that means we must fear for what Devo has in store for our French friend?” she asked, looking serious.

“It’s very dangerous to Polnareff if he stays by himself…” the Egyptian chose to say, putting all the implications he could on his words “The same is applied to us”

“It’s very likely that he wants to defeat one of us” Joseph said, stating what all of them knew before he went up and picked up the phone to call Noriko and Jotaro, who was possibly still with the former in her room.

After getting to the phone and getting a hold of his grandson, Joseph explained everything he was informed, telling all in one go as Jotaro kept quiet “He said he will be here in five, so let’s reunite in this room”

.  
.  
.  

After saying goodbye to the rest, Noriko and the little girl (whose Noriko name found out to be Anne) retired to their own room with Jotaro following them.

At first Noriko wondered why he was going with them instead of going with Polnareff to their room, but she quickly understood when he quickly passed them and went inside the room, collapsing in one of the beds face first to the mattress without any sign to wanting to move from it, making her chuckle at the ridiculous scene.

At that, she gave a side look to Anne and told her that she could use the vacant bed while she sat at the edge of the one Jotaro was using to take a nap, talking softly with hushed whispers from time to time to not wake him or bother him.

In those moments, she managed to catch sight of the girl throwing some side glares to the sleeping boy when she thought she wasn’t looking, quickly giving herself away to her.
The redhead wasn’t one to have nor understand very well others, but she could read them very well, something she had learned from her younger years, so she could easily tell that the little girl had the hots for Jotaro.

Being not one to rat out others, she decided to keep quiet and play dumb, but that was till the phone rang and woke up the sleeping boy, ripping a grin from her as she saw him grumpily get up and answer.

Since sleep seemed to be clinging to him, she barely made some words out of the conversation, catching till the end of it since Jotaro had kept quiet through all of it.

“I understand, Old Man” Jotaro said through the phone, speaking loud enough for the redhead to hear him “We will meet in the 1212 room”

“What’s going on, Jojo?” she asked him, a little worried by the sudden call and his expression that she managed to catch from the mirror in front of him before he moved.

“Let’s get going” he told her instead of explaining, walking to the door “It seems that we are in danger”

“Why it doesn’t surprise me?” Noriko told herself with a sigh, quickly telling Anne to wait for them in the room and lock the door in case something happened, promising her that they would go for an ice cream if she did to avoid any tantrum from her part.

“ Weird…” Polnareff told himself as he stood in the room with his hands on his hips “I can’t find the room’s key…”

As a sudden memory came to his mind, he walked to the nightstand and bended so his face was close enough to it and looked around, roaming his blue gaze to find them “I can swear that I left them here…” since he didn’t find them there, he moved to the bed “God damnit, where are they?” he whined “If I don’t find the key, I won’t be able to go in when I come back… Could I ask for another one in the reception?”

He thought about but shook his head, deciding to lay down on the floor to look under the bed “Will I be charged?” he asked as he inspected the place to only find the keys in right in front of his face “There they are! They must have fallen during the fuss of the fight…”
Moving and getting under the bed, he managed to catch them in time as the sound of loud footsteps echoed in the room, leaving him concerned since he was the only one in the room and quickly found himself getting tied by his wrists and ankles to the bed, hanging in the bottom of the bed and unable to move.

“What?!” he asked in shock as the sound of footsteps got closer and closer “What is-?”

But his second question was cut short as a liquid was thrown to his eyes, blinding him and making his eyes burn when they made contact.

“Is this shampoo?!” he screeched in rage with eyes closed “Damnit! My eyes!”

Like the previous attack, the sound of it was the one that warned Polnareff, but since he was unable to act, he saw someone cutting the bed’s legs with a hacksaw, faster than what he thought possible.

“Who is it?!?” he asked again, hoping for an answer but receiving none.

“I’m in trouble!” he told himself with wide eyes “I have to get out of here!”

But he realized that it was too late when the bed collapsed and made him hit hard the ground, ripping a groan from him as he heard a weird laugh and someone knocking the door, cutting short the laugh right when the door opened.

“Mr. Polnareff… I come from the room service” the person that had opened the door, a man, announced “I brought your medicaments”

“Leave! He will kill you!” he warned from under the bed, trying to catch a glimpse of the man.

“Eh?! What’s going on?!”

“Get out of here!” he warned again once he heard the other stepping inside “He will kill you!”
But it was too late as he heard the sound of meat being ripped out before the sound of the man’s body hit the ground reached his ears, the door closing loudly once the body seemed to be dragged inside.

Still from below, the silver-haired man watched as something small ran around the bed, his eyes following its movements before he was met with the face of the doll from before, who held a bloody shaving blade with its face deformed into a grotesque expression all over it.

“How did you dare?!” it asked him as it waved the blade “How did you dare to stab one of my eyes, Polnareff?!”

“A doll?! That is-!” he asked as he tried to connect the dots “SILVER CHARIOT!”

“Are you stupid?!“ it screeched at him as he bended backwards “Your Stand doesn’t possess the ability to fight out your visual field!”

The doll continued to laugh its weird laugh before it launched itself to the Stand and sliced the blade on its leg, making its user scream in pain as the wound appeared on his leg and his blood shot out from it.

He heard it crackle and felt it jump from the bed before he heard it spin something on its hands before it dragged it down towards him.

“Shouldn’t we check for Polnareff?” Noriko asked Jotaro as they walked in silence to his grandparents and Avdol’s room, feeling the urge to ask him as a weird feeling installed itself on her belly.

“No” Jotaro told her with a shake of his head, walking beside her “Gramps said he would meet us on their room…”
[STAND NAME] Ebony Devil

Power: D - Speed: D

Range: A - Durability: B

Precision: D - Growth Potential: B

[STAND MASTER] Devo

To his luck, the blade that had threatened to stab him went through the bed but hit the ground in front of his face, saving him from the hit but not for long as Ebony Evil started to repeatedly stab the mattress as it crackled over and over again.

“Damnit… Why does this bed weights so much?!” he hissed as he kept an eye on the blade and how dangerously close it was getting “It must weight one-hundred twenty kilos…” he theorized, discarding the idea of using it to his advantage “I have to use Silver Chariot to cut my binds…”

But his planning was interrupted when he noticed the doll running around before he felt its sharp teeth sinking in Silver Chariot’s legs, dragging from both of them blood and making him scream in pain.

“Bastard!” he spite out, biting back more insults as the pain shot all over him.

“When I try to attack, this happens!” he told himself as he came to a conclusion “Even when I can’t see… I would have to keep throwing lunges!”

“You are terrible!” Ebony Evil told him as it jumped away from them, hearing it crash into some bottles and breaking them as it launched back to them and ran all over them before jumping from one place to another “Even when you are a gentleman… You can’t cut what you can see!” it told
him as it kept jumping “You are a klutz! And slow too!”

Once again, Polnareff felt the sharp pain of long and pointy teeth piercing his skin and blood pouring out of the wounds on his shoulder as he felt Silver Chariot stumble on its steps while he groaned, looking at where his Stand’s rapier broke some mirror and its pieces fell to the ground before his attention was redirected to his enemy when he felt a sharp pain on his forehead due to the doll having returned to stab the mattress.

“Bastard…” he hissed at it, having enough “Stop attacking me, bloody dwarf!”

With the help of Silver Chariot and its quick moves, they managed to grab the blanket and throw it up, covering both Stands in the process as the doll made a confused sound with its throat.

Meanwhile, Joseph, Caesia and Avdol waited patiently for the rest to show till they heard the door open, the three of them looking back as they saw only two of the three people they were waiting.

“You came alone?” Joseph asked the two teenagers as he watched Jotaro go after Noriko, closing the door behind them.

“What happened with the girl?” Avdol asked the two as she was nowhere to be found.

“We left her back in the room” Jotaro shortly explained as he approached them, walking ahead of the redhead.

“Since she isn’t a Stand user, we thought that she will be in danger if we brought her with us” Noriko explained as she followed the black-haired teen, giving the full explanation.

“Good” Joseph said, finding it valid and necessary “Polnareff is the only one missing”
“He really is taking his time…” Caesia pointed out as she rested her whole weight into her seat “It’s been over five minutes…”

“Let me out! Let me go!” Ebony Devil screeched as it fought to free himself as Silver Chariot hold a secure hold on the blanket.

“I caught you!” Polnareff celebrated, making Silver Chariot grab into its lance “I will break your lance!”

His threat and action were cut as the enemy Stand sliced something sharp into the silver Stand’s hand as the same wound appeared on the Frenchman’s hand, but he bit back the pained cry and turned it into a warrior one as he willed his Stand to launch forward, turning into pieces the mirror from before.

He listened as the doll turned into dust as it crackled, but was relief when he felt his Stand rip his bind that tied him, glad when he collide with the hard ground.

“Good” he told himself as he looked at his injured hand.

“Damn it…” he hissed to himself through the pain “But at least I was able to free myself… I will call back Silver Chariot to get out of here”

But the movement in front of him called for his attention, watching as the doll ran all over the bed as it poured a liquid to the floor while crackling.

“What the hell is it doing?!” he asked out loud, watching as it stabbed some cans and threw them back at him as it continued to crackle till it sat on the floor and didn’t move.

The silence was tense but Polnareff kept his eyes glued to the doll, almost breathing in relief when he heard it crackling again, but almost jumped out of his skin when he saw its head turning in an angle of one hundred eighty degrees to look at him.
“Hey, Polnareff!” Ebony Evil called for him with a wicked and wild look on its face “Now I’m gonna rip your testicles!”

“He is really disgusting” he barked out as he watched the Stand turn its head all over the possible angles so he called for his Stand “CHARIOT!”

“Almost!” it said as it jumped on the other Stand and flew from the scene “I’ll escape to a place where you can’t see, airhead!” it mocked from its unknown position “Inspect the carpet!”

He opened his eyes very wide in shock as he felt something wet under his hands, quickly turning them to find them completely soaked by something he knew very well “This is-!”

“I soaked it with beer, juice and alcohol!” the other informed him close to his ear before it disappeared and moved somewhere else “I did it on purpose!” it added as it ran around “If I could piss, I would have done it!” and then, it asked “What do you think I will do with this faulty hairdryer and all the humidity on the floor, Polnareff?”

At that, the silver-haired man gasped in shock as the sound of the hairdryer broke the silence between them.

“I won’t dry your hair!” it said with sarcasm before it laughed again and turned on the hairdryer “Die!” it commanded him “With this, I will be able to assuage my grudge… Polnareff…”

“You aren’t the only one who made all this mess on purpose” he told him as he watched the hairdryer fall from its hands and towards the bed, quickly stabbing the object and the Stand in the process with Silver Chariot’s rapier.

“How did you know where I was with so much exactitude?!”

“I broke a mirror!” Polnareff reminded it as he smirked to his reflection in one of the broken glasses sprawled all over the floor “I have no problem to see above the bed from this angle!”

With a quick move, Silver Chariot threw the smaller Stand across the room, making it bounce from wall to wall till it crashed into some wine glasses as its user came out from under the bed.
“Now we see each other faces” he told his enemy, watching with satisfaction as it screamed with panic and tried to run away from them “Stop”

When it didn’t, he made his own Stand to rip the doll’s legs, which threw him to the floor face first “Hey, Devo, I want to ask you something…” he called for its attention “I look for a man with two right hands… *Could you tell me about his Stand?*”

“Idiot! No self-respected killer would show the identity of their Stand! They only do it when they are about to die or kill their opponent!” Devo screeched as he looked back at him “Thanks to idiots like you that show your Stands to everyone, we already know about your weak spots” he added as he pointed at him with a finger “If it wasn’t for that mirror, you would already be dead!”

“Okay then… *Attack me one more time*” he provoked the other as he looked down at him and his surprised expression “What’s wrong? Didn’t you say that you were gonna rip my testicles?!” it continued to challenge “I want to see you try, you fucking dwarf!”

“I will slice…” he told him as he watched him drag himself to him, opening his mouth wide as he jumped before he launched his Stand to do as he said, “All your body except that place!”

With a last and loud scream, Ebony Evil turned into shreds and disappeared.

“You finally arrive, Polnareff!” Joseph greeted the man with a scold as the group saw the Frenchman walking inside the room with shaky legs “Punctuality has never been your thing, it seems…” he added before he turned to look back at the others “Very well… We can get started! Let’s think of a plan to counteract Devo’s attack!”

“Jojo…” Caesia called for her husband as she stood up from her seat “I think that won’t be necessary…”

“Hm?! Why do you say that?!”

“Just look at Mister Polnareff” the light blonde said as they stared back at the said man who rested
his weight on the wall.

“I’m exhausted…” Polnareff managed to say in a breathless tone of voice before sliding down in the wall.

“It seems that he already did” she confirmed, crouching to the ground to see the damage done to his person “And for how it looks, we will have to call for the Speedwagon Foundation”

“Great…” Joseph sighed as he stood up to make some calls as the mess going outside the room reached his ears.

[STAND NAME] Silver Chariot

   Power: C - Speed: A
   Range: C - Durability: B
   Precision: B - Growth Potential: C

[STAND MASTER] Jean Pierre Polnareff

True to her words, after they got Polnareff all cleaned and parched, he was taken in under police custody due to the staff having found both the bellman and Devo’s body to an interrogatory so they could clear things out.

“Done! The Speedwagon Foundation will take care of it” Joseph informed Avdol and Caesia once the three of them were left alone in the room since they had requested Jotaro and Noriko to go and purchase their train tickets so they could leave and continue their trip “They should free Polnareff
in a couple of hours”

“That was close…” Avdol said as he looked between the two “I didn’t think they would find us so quick…”

“Meanwhile Dio has Johanna Joestar under his hands, he will know every single thing Jotaro and I do…” Joseph darkly stated with an ugly knot on his throat as the thought rushed through his mind “That’s why they hadn’t let us rest”

“He wants to get us tired and killed before we even reach Egypt” Caesia commented as she sat beside her husband after she put away their first-aid kit “If there was only one way to predict what he thinks…”

That had the three of them thinking and pondering the idea and how beneficial it would be if they could.

Both Caesia and Avdol jumped out of their skin when Joseph suddenly stood from his seat and walked towards the TV in their room with a determination taking over his features.

“There might be a way…” he told them, as he stood in front of it.

“What?” Caesia asked as she looked at him with an arched eyebrow as she stood from the bed.

“Mr. Joestar… Wouldn’t you need a Polaroid camera to do that?” Avdol asked with curiosity.

“It wouldn’t be necessary” he dismissed as he gave the Egyptian a look over his shoulder “I can project spiritual images without one”

“What?” Avdol asked in confusion as he also joined the two in front of the TV as Joseph crouched to be face to face with the device.

“We won’t be able to see what DIO is thinking nor predict it” Joseph explained as he looked at them “But my grandmother might know what he is up to…”
At that, Caesia and Avdol shared a look, both silently agreeing that the idea was good, but there wasn’t any guaranty that they would be able to connect with her since it was likely for Johanna Joestar to be under something if she had willingly stayed with the cursed vampire.

“Jojo, dear…” the Italian started, quickly choosing the words to say what she wanted to say without offending him “What makes you think that she isn’t under something?”

“I know her” the grey-haired male replied with an edge of melancholy on his voice that shut the other two by how sad it sounded, locking his emerald-green gaze with his wife’s green ones “Johanna Joestar wouldn’t have stayed with him if she didn’t know what he was up to…”

At that, the reluctant two stayed quiet, a sign that Joseph took as approval and went to position his hands on TV, one at each side as the sound of his Hamon started to echo in the room and the vines with thorns that represented Hermit Purple shot forward, getting inside the device to turn it on.

They watched as the channels started to change slowly before they started to change in a fast speed before they turned into a whirlpool that gave room to the static from earlier.

“What is going on?!” Avdol asked out loud as his eyes were glued to the device “The channels are changing in a chaotic pace!”

“It’s trying to connect the words from the TV to from a phrase!” Joseph explained with a smirk on his face, taking joy in bragging about his Stand “More than a spiritual picture, it's a spiritual audio!”

At that, they put their whole and full attention to what it was saying.

“We…!”

“Have…!”

“A…!”

“It just said: “We have a…”!” Joseph translated as he kept his full attention to his Stand.

“Trai…!”

“Tor…!”
“Among…!”

“Us…!”

“What? What has it-?” he started to ask his Stand, alarmed by the words.

“I’m very certain that it said “We have a traitor among us”!” Avdol completed the message, equally alarmed by the information.

“Ka...!”

“Kyo...!”

“In...!”

“Is...!”

“An...!”

“Agent of...!”

“Di...!”

“O...!”

“Be...!”

“Wa...!”

“Re...!”

“Kakyoin?! How?!” Joseph asked in shock.

“It can’t be!” Avdol exclaimed, equally shocked ““Kakyoin is an agent of DIO”?!”

“Bullshit!” Caesia exclaimed in the heat of the moment, refusing to believe it.

Before they could keep questioning further, the shape of a feminine body started to form between the static, quickly taking form till it revealed the perfect image of Johanna Joestar giving them her back, with her birthmark standing out even when her long black strands fell over her back.
“Granny….” Joseph unconsciously called for her with wet eyes, voice barely nothing more than a whisper as he saw her turn back and lock her sad blue eyes with his, feeling the knot on his throat tightening when he saw how empty and pained they looked.

“Joseph…” she whispered back and he used all his strength to kept his hands glued to the device to keep the connection when a sob ripped out from his throat.

“What has he done to you?” he hissed his question for her in a whisper, forcing his mouth to move as he took into her state, watching as the sun-kissed skin he had seen in the pictures he had of her seemed paler, with bruises and teeth marks over the exposed skin of her chest and neck since her dress failed to cover those parts for the cut it owned.

“Stop…” she said again, sounding so sad and deep in pain, hinting desperation as she nervously looked around “He is going to kill all of you if you keep this up…”

“What are his plans?!” he asked, desperate to know but pained to not being able to talk about what he wanted “What does he want, Granny Jojo?! What is his Stand?! Is Kakyoin working with him?!“

“I don’t know!” and oh, how sad she sounded as tears started to fall from her sapphire gaze “Please… Don’t come to Egypt!”

“Granny… Please!” he begged her as he felt tears on his eyes “Please! My daughter is dying and killing him is the only way to save her!”

“Don’t come! Please, I’m begging you!” Johanna Joestar cried out as the vines on her arm, ones that they hadn’t seen, started to spread all over her due to how distressed she sounded “He will kill you all!”

“Tell me!” he screamed to her, letting his tears fall as the two oldest Joesters from the Joestar line cried.

It was short, but he caught sight of determination on her teary eyes as her chest raised and fell while her sobs escaped her mouth and Joseph believed for a second that he would get his answer and everything would be easier but all hope left him when a deep and creepy laugh echoed all over them as the vines on her other arm bloomed with black roses as they shot to catch a more muscular arm, slowly manifesting the imponent body of DIO as his grandmother face changed from sadness
to utter horror.

“No!” he shouted in desperation as he watched his golden locks, his wicked smirk and his fangs, witnessing how he grabbed, in a tight and rough grip, his grandmother’s delicate wrist while the vines tied them together.

“You are a bastard, Joseph Joestar!” he greeted him before fury took over him “You are watching us, aren’t you?!”

“DIO!” he screamed in rage as the glass in the device started to crack, but he couldn’t care less as his hatred towards his grandfather raised to impossible levels.

“He found us! Watch out!” Avdol warned as he and Caesia grabbed Joseph by the shoulders before they were throw backwards as the TV exploded, hitting the nightstand behind them with their backs.

They took deep breaths to calm their pain and recover from the intense scene they just experienced as they watched the smoke disappear and give them a look of how ruined it was.

“What does that mean?” Avdol asked after a whole silent minute, deciding to address what they first discovered than what they just experienced.

“What you heard…” Joseph rasped out as he kept his eyes glued to the device “It clearly said that Kakyoin works for DIO and that she will betray us!”

“It can’t be!”

“Are you certain, Jojo?” Caesia asked her husband with a knot on her stomach at the thought.

“I also trust Kakyoin!” he snapped as he looked back at them “There has to be a reason but if she is communicating with DIO, is very possible that she may kill us in our sleep! She will be DIO’s Trojan horse!” he shouted before a thought crashed into his mind “Where is Kakyoin?!”

“She went with Jotaro to buy our tickets!” Avdol reminded him.
Meanwhile, Jotaro walked ahead of Noriko as Anne grabbed him by the sleeve of his coat while the redhead walked behind them with a dark and menacing aura surrounding her.

Chapter End Notes

if you have any doubt, don't be shy and comment it down below (yus, I sound lik a youtuber) (,,• - •,,)
I take one or two days to answer but I will make sure to do it as fast as I can (• ˚ 3 •˚)
also, thank you so much for taking your time in reading these long ass chapters and for bearing with me (/♡ υ♡)/
that means a lot to me as well as the support, love and feedback you have been giving since day one (ง'̀-'́)ง
I wouldn't be here, this far, if it weren't for you (●﹏●)♡
take care so I can see your comments the next week (/♡ υ♡)/
don't forget that I love you and that you can follow me on twitter (my username is softtennie) ♡
see you next week! (,,• - •,,)
Jotaro, Anne and Noriko walked around the streets of Singapore as the teenagers looked for the train station to buy the tickets so they could reach their next destination.

While both teenagers walked in silence, Anne seemed to be euphoric to be with them as she gripped Jotaro’s coat to keep up with his pace.

When she looked back from the black-haired teen and to the front, she let go of him and rushed to the little food stall she just saw, stopping in front of it to give her order to the man behind the counter.

“I want an ice cream, please” she requested.

“Welcome!” the man excitedly replied as he offered a coconut, surprising her “Girl, ice cream is good but this little friend over here is delicious” he said as he cuddle the fruit, surprising her even more “It’s frozen coconut, how about it?”

She stared down at the offered fruit with uncertain, not knowing if she should or shouldn’t accept it since they came looking for the ice cream Noriko had promised her.

“Let’s try it” Jotaro said behind her, making her look back at him as he stood with Noriko by his side “Serve us three”

“Allright!” the man exclaimed with delight as he held and offered a coconut “That would be… Twelve dollars!”

At that, her attention perked up and made her return her stare to the man, disbelief taking a hold of her expression for the price “Make us a discount! Make it six!”
She was about to keep protesting, but she stopped when she saw Kakyoin pulling out her wallet.

“Here you go”

“Very well!” the vendor accepted the money “Thank you!”

As the redhead was about to put her wallet away, it was snatched from her hands by a thief that was passing by, who ran away once he got it “I’ll take that! Thank you, little Miss!”

Noriko furrowed her delicate eyebrows with a dark look on her face before she pulled out a neutral expression as she called Hierophant Green, launching it towards the thief and made it grab his ankles, making him fall hard into the concrete ground and drop her wallet as she calmly approached him, hovering above him with a dark and menacing aura all over her.

“Did you really think that you would get away with it, you piece of shit?!” Noriko loudly hissed at the man, making Jotaro, Anne and the other man to look back at her in time to see her grabbing the man’s head “I’ll make you spit out your insides!”

With that promise, she quickly hit the man with her knee, dragging blood from the man’s nose as it broke, ripping pained screams from the man as she let go of him to let slip out of her hold and make him hit the ground.

“Kakyoin!” Jotaro shouted her name from both surprise and to make her stop as Anne looked at the scene with wide eyes, both of them never having seen Noriko act that way.

“You scumbag…” she hissed back at the thief as she grabbed the yellow strands of his hair with a delicate hand before letting him go with enough force to smack his head against the pavement once again “How dare you use your disgusting fingers… TO STEAL MY PRECIOUS WALLET?!”

In a quick move of the head, Hierophant Green extended four of its tendrils to wrap them around the thief’s wrist and ankles, holding him in place as she started to kick him over and over again on his chest, stomach and legs repeatedly, ripping pained and choked groans from the man as he spit blood from the constant hits as her Stand tendrils pulled and pulled each extremity.

“I can’t let you get away with this… Or can I?” she asked him with a perverse voice as she reduced the hits till she stopped but she quickly moved till she stood in the middle of the man open legs “TAKE THIS!” she screeched as she lifted and let down one leg, making sure that the heel of her shoes hit right in place in the man’s crotch over and over again.
Watching this and spiritually feeling the experience, both males winced at the pained scream of the thief as Noriko basically pulverized and reduced his crotch to nothing with the heel of her shoe.

Having enough of it when the distinctive sound of something close to snapping reached his ears, Jotaro decided to take care of the situation since it weirded him out to see Noriko, who was naturally calm, polite, pacific and somewhat talkative so out of herself, acting in such a violent and sadistic way, especially if it terrified Anne, who seemed to have taken a great liking in the redhead.

“Hey! What do you think you are doing, Kakyoin?!” he asked her with a hard voice to tower above her incessant chant of hitting him “You are going to kill him!”

And he wasn’t kidding, not when he saw the way Hierophant Green’s tendrils tightened their hold and started to pull more and more with each hit she gave.

“I-Is she really gonna-?” Anne asked herself in shock as she stared at the scene wide eyed, not used to see the older girl like that “I can’t even believe she would do that for a wallet…”

“Kakyoin!” Jotaro shouted her name again as he went behind her and pushed her aside from the poor bastard as he made Star Platinum fetch the green tendrils around the other’s extremities, using more strength than needed when they refused to let go, consequently making the redhead wince “Didn’t you hear me when I told you to stop?!”

The girl said nothing as she was pushed, but she trembled with rage for the action while Jotaro crouched down to check on the man when he saw and made sure that Hierophant Green was gone and back to its user.
“Hey, Kakyoin…” he called for her as he looked at her back as she crouched to fetch her fallen wallet “There is definitely something wrong with you…” he stated, even when he wanted to make it a question since he could tell something was wrong with her “Are you upset?”

He patiently waited for her to turn around and face him, feeling a dark and menacing aura coming from her but it was cut short when she started to rub her sleeve-covered-arm, where he had touched her to push her away.

“It hurts…” she complained in a whine and a pout on her face, something that surprised him since he hadn’t seen her do that before “That wasn’t very gentle nor kind from your part, Jojo” she said as she started to approach him with a gentle swing of her hips that he hadn’t seen her do “He tried to steal my wall, that makes him a criminal…”

At that, Anne suddenly stopped the jogging she did to reach them, only to have the frozen coconut snatched from her hands by Noriko.

“I had to punish him” she excused, locking her violet eyes with Jotaro’s teal-blue ones “Am I wrong, Jotaro?”

He held their staring match all the time, not taking his eyes from her as he saw her drink from the straws with an odd look, making him wonder what had to be wrong with her for her to snap like that.

“Kakyoin…”

“Why are you looking at me like that, Jojo?” she asked him with an odd smile “You look like you want to kill me” and then, she put her hands on her wide hips “Don’t tell me that you are considering that just because I gave his lesson to this petty thief…”

At that, the injured and traumatized man started to desperately crawl away for his life while some kids started to excitedly shout for some bugs in the tree behind them, something that called for the redhead’s attention as she looked above her shoulder to check it before she turned to look back at Jotaro, covering her mouth with a delicate hand as she laughed.

“Jojo, don’t think so much about it~” she sing-sang before giving him an embarrassed look “I was just angry” she confessed as she touched her forehead, making her curly bang fall on the back of her hand “Our trip has been tiring, so I was in a bad mood”
“You are in a bad mood?” he asked her, think of the possibility but not eating it “I saw you pretty happy”

At that, he saw her give him a cold stare even when her body seemed to be trying to give another vibe, so he decided to drop it for now and would question her back at the hotel since they had a mission at hand.

“The Old Man, my grandmother and Avdol think that it would be better if we travel to India by train” he informed her as he walked away from her with his hands on the pockets of his coat “We leave tomorrow” he added “We will take the cable car to buy the tickets in the Singapore Station”

Once Jotaro was far away and the kids left the tree as she drank a little more of her coconut, she turned to look back at the tree with a hunger glowing on her eyes.

Meanwhile, as Jotaro walked ahead of them without any sign to wait for them, Anne turned to look back at the teen so they could walk together.

“Noriko…” she started to say as she gave the girl a look, finding her standing in the tree as she made eating and shallowing sound “Jojo is getting away…”

“Oh, yeah” she heard the redhead said as she stopped doing the sounds and with a full mouth that made her voice sound very muffled “I will catch you guys later”

“It seems that you really like coconut water, Noriko” she commented with a smile as she walked a little ahead, turning to look at the older girl in time when the redhead turned her head and something similar to a bug’s leg stuck out of her mouth before she dragged it inside her mouth with her tongue.

Throwing a quick glare to the tree, the poor girl found herself shocked as none of the beetles from before where there, feeling as if a cold buckle of water was dropped to her when the realization hit
“T-That was a beetle…” Anne told herself as she watched the other chew her “food” “N-No… I should have imagined it…” she denied and tried to reassure herself since she could believe that a girl like Noriko would do such a thing “I must have been the coconut’s peel or other thing…”

“Yes… I do love coconuts” Noriko said in a creepy voice that send multiples shivers down Anne’s back for how her voice sounded, making her gasp in horror and give some steps backwards before she turned and ran to Jotaro, cuddling his arm as she breathed heavily and looked down at the ground with wide eyes.

“Is something the matter?” Jotaro asked Anne due to her obvious panicked state she seemed to be in, especially when he noticed her looking back at the other girl.

“I-It’s nothing” the little noirette stuttered a bit, making Jotaro look back at Noriko and lock gazes with her as something kept coming out of her.

After walking for a while, the trio finally made it to the cable car to reach the Singapore Station, being a relief to Jotaro, who stood beside Anne behind the railing with an ice cream on their hands as they admired the view the city awarded them.

“Hey, Jotaro” Noriko called for him as she approached him, the swing of her hips being a little bit more obvious than before “Aren’t you going to eat that cherry?” she asked once she stood beside him “If you aren’t going to eat, give it to me… I’m starving”
saw her take it, he felt himself be pushed backwards by her, making him stumble and fall from the railing.

“Be careful, Jotaro!” she warned him with a smirk on her face, one he noticed when he moved his head to see her.

“Jojo!” Anne screamed for Jotaro as she moved forwards and managed to grab him with wrapping her arms around his wrist.

“What is wrong with Noriko?!” she desperately asked herself as she felt her arms trembled from Jotaro’s weight while Noriko laughed behind them.

“It was a prank!” the redhead said as she laughed while Jotaro only gave her a serious look before he grabbed the railing and pulled himself up while she pulled the cherry close to her lips “It was a simple prank, Jotaro-kun~”

He said nothing as he stood up from the crouched position he had when he returned to stand in front of her, keeping his anger at bay, reminding himself that she was stressed by all their battles with the Stand users they had had in the last couple of days, especially the one with Strength.

He watched her as she finally moved the cherry and let it fall on her mouth, cringing internally at the way her tongue moved all over the little fruit with a weird and disturbing look on her delicate face.

“Rerorerorerorerorerero…” he heard her chant as she kept licking till it fell from her lips and into the ground between them.
“It’s like she is a completely different person!” the little noirette cried out to herself as she watched the scene, a little distressed to see the older acting like that.

“That look again!” the redhead pointed out with an edge of annoyance as she pointed at him with a finger “You are looking at me in that way again, Jotaro-senpai…”

But the black-haired teen said nothing and kept his stoic look even when he was close to snapping when he saw her pick up the fallen cherry and eat it, a little surprised to see her grow taller in a blink of the eye.

“Let’s go up, Kakyoin” he told her, challenging her as he saw the frown on her face when she realized he wasn’t showing how pissed off he felt “The cable car has arrived…”

But she didn’t even move, she just kept her own pissed off look on her face, so he pressed on “I told you to get on” he almost growled as he raised a fist “With this ticket that I have here…” he started “I will send you flying since its very obvious that you are possessed!”

Jotaro had suspected from the very beginning that something was clearly wrong with Noriko since, even when they had learned more about themselves from their actions and the occasional talk they had done about random things, he knew that she was out of herself with the subtle flirting and her obvious attempts to get him killed so, when he hit her straight into the face, he felt satisfaction when he watched her stumbled back.

But his satisfaction was short lived when he saw her mouth slipping and opening in a disturbing way that let to view all her teeth.

“What?!” he asked in shock as he saw her body fly straight into the cable car they were supposed to ride as Anne screamed in both shock and fear, not believing that Jotaro was able to hit a girl so roughly.
But he ignored the younger and walked to the cable car, standing outside and in the frame as he looked at the fallen body of the redhead, who immediately laughed when she felt him close.

“You’re wrong” “Noriko” said as she turned to look back at him, with the disgusting wound still present on “her” face with “her” tongue out and the half-eaten cherry resting on it “You’re a little wrong about me being possessed”

A shiver ran down his spine as the words sank in him as he watched “her” lick the cherry and chant, realizing that this person wasn’t Noriko and, if he was correct (and he knew he was correct) something must have happened to her if this person looked like her.

“This is not Kakyoin!” he voiced out with wide eyes as his mind stopped at the imagine of a brutally murdered Noriko, abandoned somewhere to be found as if she was nothing but a mere garbage that was completely worthless, a thought that angered him and made his heart beat in slow motion for the shock and dread he was feelings.

“Haven’t you notice that my body has been growing?” “Noriko” asked him as “she” stood from “her” fallen position, revealing that “she” was now taller than him since “she” was pocking the superior part of the door frame and towering over him.

“Who are you?” he asked in a hiss, trying to clear his mind to think straight.

“A Stand…” he thought at first, but discarded it “But I hit it…” he pointed out as a more dreadful but powerful idea “There is a Stand that I can hit?”

Meanwhile, Anne watched fearfully as Jotaro went in the cable car to face “Noriko”, running towards the little cabin when she saw it move, leaving her behind as she stood far away from the two.

“Jojo!” she shouted in alarm, worried by the black-haired teen.
“I merge with the bodies that I consume” his newfound enemy explained with its disturbing voice as it stood in front of each other “So I’m a Stand that normal people can see and even touch” it said as it melted Noriko’s face in a disturbing way “I’m Yellow Temperance, from the Temperance card!”

At that, all trace from Noriko in it was erased and whipped way, leaving a shirtless man with long and curly black hair and a yellow substance surrounding him “And this is my real and handsome face!”

The fire of the anger and rage he was feeling was increased in the deepest of his mind but he buried it deep down in him for now as he stared at the man with a dark look while his eyes were obscured by his hat.

“Come on, Jotaro-senpai!” the man told him as the yellow substance moved to rest on his shoulders “Take a look to your hand… I left you a little present when you hit me…”

As he felt the weight of something out of place on his pinky, Jotaro lifted his hand to examine it, surprisingly finding the same yellow substance from the Stand on his finger, feeling it moving.

“I warn you!” he told him with faked kindness “If you touch it, it will invade your other hand!” he also explained as he pointed at him with a finger “How about you prick your nose?!” he challenged with an evil smirk “That Stand devours its prey slowly and the more it eats, the bigger it gets! You won’t be able to get rid of it!”

“Miserable…” the black-haired teen hissed with hate after he dropped his hand, calling for Star Platinum to hit the Stand user on the face.

“ORA!”

“Why do you say that?!” the man screeched his answer as his Stand moved to attack “When I digest you, I’ll make sure to fill your mouth with your own trash!”
In a quick move, Star Platinum’s stretched arm was enfolded with the yellow substance that made Jotaro wince as fire seemed to take over all his arm.

“It’s burning me!” he complained as he listened the other laughing for his pain, making him look back with anger “Bastard…”

Meanwhile, after being unable to reach the cable car, Anne ran to the phonebooth and called for the hotel the rest were staying in, hoping that she could contact Jotaro’s grandparents or Avdol so they could tell her what to do, nervously waiting for it after requesting the receptionist to contact her with them, almost jumping out of her skin when someone picked up the call.

“Oh, grandpa Jojo?” she asked as the voice reached her ears “We are in trouble!”

“Anne!?” she heard from the other side “What’s going on!?”

“Noriko is-!”

“Kakyoin!?”

“Noriko’s head slipped in two! But that Noriko wasn’t the real Noriko!” she explained with urgency “And now Jojo is being attacked by a type of a slime! It’s horrible!”

“Calm down! Where are you!?”

“In the cable car station close to the mall!” she replied with their location as she saw the cable car going away “He is being attacked! Noriko is attacking Jojo!”
“Come back to the hotel immediately…” Joseph indicated the little girl with urgency as he was between both Caesia and Avdol as they listened to the frightened girl.

It had surprised him to hear the girl when he picked the call, but not when she started to explain what was going on, not after the incident with the TV and after having talked with his grandparents and his Stand told him of Kakyoin’s intentions.

The three of them were about to leave and go to aid Jotaro, but they quickly turned when they heard someone walking in the room, making them turn to look back at the real Kakyoin, who was wearing a soft green sundress, a sun hat, sunglasses, and sandals.

“Did someone say my name?” she asked, approaching them as she took off her glasses, looking at them with a confused look on her violet eyes.

“Where were you?!” he asked her, half relieved half worried for his grandson now that he saw her with them.

“Jojo left me behind so I went to tan in the pool” she explained with a stoic look “But I left when some idiots tried to hit on me”

At that, Caesia unconsciously smiled while Joseph and Avdol shared a look, not surprised but greatly amused by the girl’s attitude.

“Is there something wrong?” she asked them, also taking off her hat and putting the items aside.

“It’s okay… This is the real one” Joseph informed the girl through the phone as he heard her frenetically asking what was going on “Anne, that means that other Kakyoin is fake!”
“I know!” Anne cried out as she cupped the phone to her ear in time to see the window where Jotaro and the fake Noriko were in broke and Jotaro shot out from it, scaring her, and ripping a scream from her “Jojo!”

“What’s going on Anne?!” Jotaro’s grandfather asked her, obviously frightened by her scream.

“Jojo just jumped out of the cable car!”

[STAND NAME] Star Platinum

Power: A - Speed: A

Range: C - Durability: A

Precision: A - Growth Potential: A

[STAND MASTER] Kujo Jotaro

Meanwhile, Jotaro, who had previously jumped out from the cable car to put distance between him and Yellow Temperance, felt the rush of air as he tried to grab onto the pole that held the whole system, falling immediately from his position to the ground due to gravity so he called out for Star Platinum to grab onto the edge of the wide pole and pulled himself up.

With a groan as half of his body was up, he looked down at his hand to see the progress of the yellow substance on his finger, finding it dragging more blood out of him.
“Give me a break” he sighed in exasperation, closing his eyes as he started to think.

“A Stand that merges with the tissues?” he asked himself as he kept looking at his hand “It’s devouring my finger…”

At that, he pulled all the weight of his body and jumped, falling to his feet, and immediately standing up as he looked from the cable car to cable car as the breeze moved his coat’s tail “Anyway, before facing him… I have to take care of this Stand” he told himself, referring to the one on his finger “In the worst case scenario, I will have to cut my finger…”

It didn’t bother him that thought that much since he was ready to face it all, but he quickly found his enemy looking back at him from the broken hole in the cable car.

“Do you think that you escaped?” Yellow Temperance asked him with a smirk on his face “Well, let me tell you this… Take out the shit out of your ears and listen to me: my Stand, Yellow Temperance, doesn’t have any weakness”

It bothered Jotaro how confident his enemy sounded, but he just kept watching him with an emotionless stare.

“Don’t think that you can escape” the man told him as his car moved away “It’s just that I don’t have the necessity to chase you, piece of shit!”

At that, he pulled his lighter, lighting it up and pulling it close to his finger.

“I can’t avoid burning myself, but I will have to calcine it” he told himself as he moved close the lighter, biting down the pain as the slime started to gurgle but quickly yelped in surprise as the Stand stabbed and extended all over his hand.

“I-It spread!” he realized as he saw more blood coming out of his wounded finger “Heating it up was counterproductive… Damn it…” he cursed at his idea before he looked at another cable car to find a kid licking an ice cream scoop, giving him a quick idea.

With a sigh, he picked some speed and ran towards the edge, calling for Star Platinum, using him to grab onto the cable car with the kid in, ripping the door to get in, coming across the kid, a dog that barked at him, the kid’s father, and a fat woman.

“Excuse me” he said as he stood in the door frame.
“What a way to show up!” the woman exclaimed, irritating him a bit.

“Just ignore me” he told her before looking back at the kid, crouching down to be eye level with the boy, trying to be friendly and avoid intimidate him “Hey, kid, I need to borrow your popsicle”

Not waiting for his answer, he gently took the kid’s popsicle from his hands, feeling like shit for taking the popsicle away from the kid when his eyes started to water.

“Hey! What are you doing with that kid’s popsicle?!” the woman asked him, making him look back at her.

“Is he your kid?”

“No”

“Then shut up and watch the view” he snapped at her and turned to look at the now crying kid with a softer expression “I’m sorry, I’ll buy you one when we get off”

“Okay…” the kid agreed with tearful eyes as he nodded his head, accepting the deal.

“If I can’t heat it…” he mumbled as he dragged the popsicle to his hand, but only received more pain as the slime dug deeper on his hand, making him wince “That fucking bastard…” he hissed as he looked at his hand “Now it got thorns and incrusted on my hand!”

“Hey, you!” the woman called for him “Neither fire nor ice will work!”

At that, Jotaro realized that his enemy was back with wide eyes but quickly turned it into sharper ones as he saw him blow his nose and squeeze his costume’s breast, making him cringe and feel disgusted by the action knowing what lay under that layer.

“I told you! It doesn’t have any weakness!” Yellow Temperance reminded him as his legs melted and trapped the dog, making it cry out as he laughed “You piece of shit!”
“You are-!” Jotaro started to hiss but was interrupted by the little kid’s desperate cries.

“Papa! The puppy! The puppy!”

“Bastard… You were waiting for me in this cable car…” he told the other, furious and pissed off by him.

“My poor Pockey!” the man screamed in fear as he held his child close to him while he started to pull the dog’s slash, alerting him in the process.

“It’s dangerous! Don’t pull it!” the teen tried to warn the older male “Let it go!”

But it was too late since the poor dog’s head shot up, having been ripped from its body, creating more desperate and terrified screams from the father and son.

“I came to end you…” the black-haired male sing-sang as he destroyed his costume and exposed his real form “Jotaro-senpai!”

Using Star Platinum as his new plan, Jotaro willed him to grab one broken piece of the doorframe and threw it to the man with his cry “ORA!”

“You are fast! However…” the long-haired man told him, shooting his Stand to stop the pole Star Platinum threw at him, smirking “I have to keep reminding you that I have no weakness, did you even heard me?” he asked him with mockery “You fucking scumbag!”

“My Stand is an armor that absorbs energy…” he explained “A barrier that attacks! No matter how fast or strong you are… You can do nothing against Yellow Temperance! I’m invincible!” he proclaimed with a smirk while Star Platinum tried to drag down the pole to hit the other “You can only escape from me by cutting your hand!”

And Jotaro could feel it since more blood continued to come out of his wounds as he felt the man put more pressure in it through his Stand, but continued to be unfaced as he kept his sharp look into the long-haired man as Yellow Temperance shot forward him.
“Do you understand?!?” the other Stand user screeched as the slimy thing touched his body “You can’t do anything anymore! You can’t escape!” he screeched again with a wicked smirk “Not till it digests you! I’ll eat you!”

“Give me a break” he said in a sigh as he felt the burning sensation on his skin but didn’t let it bother him “This Stand has no weakness… It may be the most powerful of the all… Pretty scary…” he admitted, his sight glued to the confused look of the other “However, the Kujo family… No… The Joestar family has a particular way of thinking when it comes to fighting…”

He paused for a second and continued “Just one” he mumbled “I only have one last plan…”

“What?!”

“And that is…” he ignored the question and continued to say, swearing he could heard his grandfather’s voice at the back of his head, making Star Platinum open a hole in the ground with the force of his hit “To run away!”

Not waiting for any form of answer, he launched himself down in the hole and fell, dragging with himself the new enemy he found.

“What?!” Yellow Temperance asked him with a smirk as he hovered above him “I’m already directing you, asshole!” he shouted at him “Do you really think that you can escape while my Stand is surrounding you?!”

“I know that I’m running…” Jotaro confessed as Star Platinum grabbed the thick mass on his big hands as they crushed the surface and sank into the water “But I’m diving towards the water!”

“I-I can’t breathe…” the man choked out to the black-haired teen as he was covered with his own Stand, letting him go when he was free from the yellow substance.

“Your Stand put its guard down” he pointed out as both him and Star Platinum came out of the water “Even if my Stand is invincible, if I defeat its user, the Stand will die” at that, he moved his Stand to grab Yellow Temperance by his shoulders since they were behind him “Do you understand?”

The teal-blue eyed teen ignored the frightened gasp from the other as he kept looking at him with a serious expression, letting his eyes show how pissed off he was.
“You really enjoyed insulting me a little while ago back there…” he reminded him with a strong voice filled with amusement as he raised a fist “I’m someone who takes insults to the heart…”

Now that he stated his mind, Jotaro drew back his fist and brought it forward, deciding to be him the one that take the lead instead of Star Platinium, making him hold into the man as he beat him.

“ORAI!” he shouted, imitating his Stand’s cry as he hit his enemy before using his elbow to threw him away.

“Stop…” Yellow Temperance begged him as he bleed, showing that he had knocked some of his teeth, looking pathetic “I can’t recover!” he wailed with desperation “You broke my nose and I will have to use wires in my jaw!” he cried out “I’m only doing this because DIO offered me money!”

He stayed quiet as he gulped down the knot on his throat before continuing “I don’t have the most minimum intention to lose my life, see?!”

“How about you give me some information?” the teen asked him with a sharp glare, earning himself a surprised sound from his enemy “Tell me about the other Stand users that will attack us”

“I-I can’t tell you about them!” he wailed in a desperate cry “I have pride! I can’t rat out my partners!”

“I see…” he told him, raising his fist to hit him again “That’s very honorable from your part…”

“I remember!” the long-haired male shouted in panic as he decided his escape needed to be another “Death, The Empress, The Hanged Man and The Emperor are the four that are coming for you!”

“I see…” he told him again as he hummed in thought “What about their abilities?”

“I-I don’t know them!” Jotaro tightened his grip and threatened the male, making him lift his arms in surrender “N-No, really! I swear that I don’t know them!” he shouted in panic “Stand users don’t show their powers since it’s like exposing their abilities!”

“B-But a witch was the one that told DIO about the Stands and her son is among the four of them” the man continued to explain “His name is J. Geil, he is a man with two right hands, his card is
At that, Jotaro felt something move inside of him as he thought of the Frenchman and how valuable that information could be for him as well for the rest of them all.

“He is the one who killed Polnareff’s sister, right?” Yellow Temperance asked him, but Jotaro knew that he already knew the answer “I had heard rumors of his abilities…” he added as he moved towards the edge of the street to support himself “A mirror… It’s said that he uses a mirror…” he informed “I have never seen him but I doubt that Polnareff can defeat him… He’ll die”

They stayed silent for a second as the teal-blue eyed teen tried to order his thoughts with the new information that was given to him but wasn’t surprised with the sudden triumphant smirk the other gave him when he saw something beside him.

“I have realized something, Jotaro…” the long-haired man told him as he lifted himself up from the water “I think that the fortune goddess is still beside me…” he laughed with his smirk intact “Do you see that drainage? It has a lot of crayfishes” he told him, telling off a hint of his intention “Take a good look”

Against his best judgement, Jotaro took a look of the three crayfishes, watching in confusion as one of them seemed to have been dragged away by something, ripping a surprised sound from his throat when one of the screws holding the drainage shot out and the slimy presence of Yellow Temperance started to come from it.

He shot a quick look to the Stand user and saw the dark look he had as his arm was stretched and his Stand started to get in from the closest sewer.

“All the sewer!” he told himself but was too late as he was quickly surrounded by the slimy Stand when it shot out from the drainage.

“That little drainage is connected to this sewer!” his enemy informed him as he laughed and stood above the said place with his Stand getting inside said sewer “I will hold you!”

Loyal to his words, the yellow Stand quickly slammed him against the wall of the drainage hard, leaving him in a weird position.

“Now you can’t attack me!” Yellow Temperance’s user celebrated “It seems that you won’t use the
information I gave you about the man with two right hands, Kujo Jotaro!”

At this point, Jotaro was trembling with rage, tired by this idiot while he bled from the wounds.

“And to think that this little hole would help me to defeat you… I’m really lucky!” the other kept celebrating “I even absorbed those crayfishes to make me stronger” he informed as he dragged the teen closer to the drainage “I’ll grind you into a jam!”

“If I kill you, DIO will give one hundred millions of dollars!” he celebrated, still bragging as he laughed “I’ll win lots of money just by facing you some couple of minutes! Don’t you think that I’m very lucky?” he asked him with a smirk on his bloody face “Useless waste…”

“Give me a break…” Jotaro mumbled as he looked down from his pinned position before raising his face to look straight into the other “You still don’t understand what is going on? Don’t you realize that your luck is over?” he asked him with his eyebrows frowned “You had the opportunity to escape with a simple nose fracture…”

At this point, his words sounded between an angered hiss and growl as he called out from Star Platinum, who raised one of his powerful and buffy arms from the water to attack at his user’s will, with an excited grin on his face.

“You could have been very lucky if you had!” he told him as his warrior Stand slammed his fist in the wall beside him, throwing up the damn bastard with the water’s pressure.

“A blow of water pressure from the drain?!” Yellow Temperance asked from above before he was hit by the lid, knocking him out and making him retreat his Stand, freeing Jotaro from his pinned position, allowing him to Stand behind the long haired male as he was slammed into the water.

With a neutral expression on his face, even when he was burning with rage, he grabbed him by the hair and lifted him up while the idiot cried out in fear for what he was going to experience, turning to look back at him with a panicked expression on his face as more blood smeared his face.

“I was just joking, Mr. Jotaro!” he excused himself as he moved his arms to prove his point “It was a simple joke! Don’t take it so much to the heart!” it was evident that he was getting desperate as the teen showed no trace of forgiveness and kept his hold on his hair “Come on… Do you think that I was being serious?!”

But the black-haired teen kept quiet, not bothering to answer nor say something else, giving the
other the evident answer.

“You aren’t going to hit me again, right?” Yellow Temperance’s user nervously asked “I’m already wounded… You already broke my nose and will have to operate my jaw…”

“I have nothing else to say to you” he told him as he looked down at him, shutting him out “Someone so pathetic as yourself doesn’t deserve my words”

With that said, Jotaro called for Star Platinum to pulverize the man, something his Stand did with fast and precise hits as the man cried out in pain.

[STAND NAME] Yellow Temperance

**Power:** D  **Speed:** C

**Range:** E  **Durability:** A

**Precision:** E  **Growth Potential:** D

[STAND MASTER] Rubber Soul

After returning back to the hotel and informed the rest of what he learned about their enemies, Jotaro literally collapsed onto the bed he, Noriko and Anne were going to sleep after taking a long bath and let Noriko take care of his wounds since he refused to sleep in the same bed as Polnareff now that they were going to crash in the girls’ room due to their own being destroyed in the Frenchman’s fight with Ebony Devil.

None of them said a thing since the air was tense between them after Polnareff left the room to be by himself due to the newfound information of his sister’s murder had definitely affected him so they went to bed without much problem, with just the redhead’s soft voice wishing goodnight to
the three of them with her stripped pajamas in as she cuddle with Anne as much she could to give Jotaro room in the bed.

The black-haired teen thought it would be uncomfortable at first since it was him and the two females and it was at the beginning, but he quickly got settle when he moved around and cuddle with Noriko right after Polnareff’s loud snores filled the room, discovering that the position was far more comfortable than laying down on his back, sleep quickly enfolding him as he also drifted to the land of dreams.

♡

The next morning, very early to some of their likes, the teenagers and the Frenchman were woken up by a loud Joseph, who earned himself a pillow straight into the face courtesy of his grandson, waking the other three in the process, who groaned in annoyance as he left, sitting in bed as they rubbed the sleep away from their eyes and faces.

Contrary to the awkward moment Jotaro thought he would share with Noriko due to them being woken up by his grandfather before what he had planned, the girl didn’t show any sign of discomfort with the scene, she just gave him a smile and a gorgy “good morning” as she dragged herself out of the bed, getting ready to start their day to leave, something he was kinda grateful of.

After all of them got ready and left to the station, Jotaro and Noriko sat together in a duo seat beside Joseph, Caesia, Avdol and Polnareff, who sat in a larger table.

“Give me a break…” Polnareff said as he looked out of his window “So we are finally going to India…”

It was obvious for the rest that Polnareff was out of himself after the news, but they decided to leave him alone so he could sort his thoughts and feelings out.

“The man with two right hands is called J. Geil” he continued to say as Jotaro watched him from his seat, taking into his conflicted look but quickly changed it as he looked up at them “By the way… Where is Anne?”

“She stayed in the Singapore station till the train parted but…” Joseph explained, pausing a bit to show he felt uncertain about that.

“I’m sure that she must have reunited with her father” Avdol tried to reassure the rest with a smile
as Noriko placed her attention into the conversation.

“That story about meeting with her father must be nothing more but pure lies…” the silver-haired male said with a smile before he looked at Jotaro “Oh well, guess we will miss her, right, Jojo?”

At that, Noriko covered her mouth with a hand as she laughed while Jotaro gave a small smirk, a silent agreement that they all have noticed the little noirette’s crush on him.

“By the way…” she said as she stopped laughing and looked back at Jotaro with a soft smile “I still can’t believe that a Stand could have disguised itself as me…”

Honestly, Noriko was kinda disgusted that a Stand had taken her as a disguise and did all it did to Jotaro, but also flustered to learn that it had used her little increasing liking to the black-haired teen against her, but decided not to address it.

“I think it did it when we barely left the hotel” he shared his theory with her and a raised finger, watching her nod in agreement before her eyes widened as she looked down at his plate, where two cherries lay in.

“Jojo… I don’t wanna sound rude but… Are you going to eat those cherries?” she asked him, pointing at the little fruits “I can’t resist myself, they are my favorite” she informed with a smile “Could you give them to me?”

“Sure, go ahead” he told her with the corner of his lips lifted as he repressed his urge to smile.

“Thank you” she thanked as she grabbed the cherries and dropped them to her tongue, rolling them all over her tongue as she looked out of the window and started to chant “Rerorerorerorerorerero…”

The image itself made Jotaro cringe for the memories of the fake Noriko that crossed through his mind, realizing that Rubber Soul must have taken a good look of the redhead to know about this little habit of hers (since he could tell that it was a habit of hers for how fast she moved her tongue).

“Look, Jojo” she called for his attention as she rested her cheek on her hand “Those flamingoes are flying”
“Give me a break…” he sighed as he rested his head on a hand and closed his eyes, trying to rest and forget the image that seemed to be buried on his mind.

. 
.

Unbeknown to them, Anne was in the compartment behind theirs, sleeping soundlessly as she cuddle with a jacket, dreaming about a certain black-haired teen.

“Jojo…” she whispered in her sleep, snoring all the way in the trip.

Chapter End Notes

and that's all for today's update!

thank you so for much for reading! ☻
I hope you have had liked this chapter even when it's one of the ones that I despite for how it turned out (■-〜-■)

any positive or constructive opinion is well received so don't forget to leave down in the comments („• - •„)

I apologize if I didn't reach your expectations but this one was hard to write (■-〜-■)

anyways, I wish you a happy weekend and lots of love and health in these hard times ☻

take care! ☻
The Emperor and The Hanged Man: Part 1

Chapter Summary

Sometimes... Revenge might lead you to a path where you will face a bigger loss...

Chapter Notes

See the end of the chapter for notes

“Tokyo, Hong Kong, Singapore…” Joseph Joestar listed the names of the countries they had traveled to as the six of them stood in front of the ship’s door they had gotten into after leaving Singapore “And now we will start crossing India… Although, I’m a little worried…” he confessed and looked at the rest with a sheepish smile “When I think of India, I imagine a place where you only eat curry and get easily sick”

“What worries me is that my body won’t be able to support the cultural shock” Polnareff whined as he nervously held his luggage’s straps.

At that, Avdol chuckled, amused by their words “They are nothing more but misconceptions” he said to calm them down “Relax… This country is nice, with good and humble people, I guaranty this to you…”

At that, the ship came to an abrupt stop that had all of them using their strength to avoid falling to the ground, listening as the ramp was pressed to the door so they could step outside without them falling to the water if the ship moved.

“We arrived to Calcutta” Avdol announced as he opened the door “Let’s get going”

They couldn't even give a step outside the ship when they were immediately surrounded by the citizens, with lots of males, children and women asking for different stuffs from them.

“A charity, please!” the kids begged Jotaro as they tugged at his coat and the long chain of his uniform.

“I’ll carry your luggage!” a group of males said to Polnareff, who held his bag for dear life to keep the men away from it.
“You are beautiful, be my wife!” some young males begged Noriko, who pressed herself to Caesia, who was having the same issue but with older males, both of them looking caught off guard by the requests.

“Do you need an antidote?” a man asked Joseph, who tried to keep calm as he heard some males flirting with his wife “It doesn’t irritate the stomach!”

“I will show you a hotel!”

“I don’t need it” he refused as calm as he could, his eyes throwing daggers to the males around his wife.

“I stepped on cow shit! Goddamn it!” Polnareff cried out from one side as all of them where giving each other’s backs.

“They already stole my wallet!” Noriko whined at the rest, feelings its weight gone.

“No, thank you…” Joseph continued to refuse with a tight smile “Really!”

“I’m married” Caesia excused herself to stop the males from keep asking her about marrying them, feeling her patient slip from her hands.

“Charity! Charity! Charity!” the kids keep chanting as they kept pulling Jotaro’s chain and coat “If you don’t give us charity, you won’t go to Heaven!”

“Hey! Get your nose out of there!” Polnareff snapped at the little kid that was looking in his bag, lifting it up above his head.

“A-Avdol! Is this place India?!” Joseph asked in alarm and disbelief, looking back at his friend from above his shoulder.

“Yes! Isn’t it a fantastic country?” Avdol asked as he looked back at them with a smile and a deep
laugh “This is what it makes it so fascinating!”

After successfully getting out of the mass of people, the six of them managed to reach and book a stay in one of the hotels around the zone to pass the night so they could resume their missions.

Right now, all of them sat in a table together, just relaxing and feeding themselves so they could fully recover and face the remaining Stands they had yet to defeat.

“Come on, try it” Avdol urged the others as he laughed at the uncertain look on Joseph’s face as he stared down at the cup of coffee in front of him “It’s chai and it’s delicious”

Still uncertain, Joseph called it a shot and drank the beverage, immediately feeling his whole body relaxing when the delicious taste hit his taste buds, a way he hadn’t felt since they started the journey.

“I finally can relax…” he mumbled, enjoying the calming sensation it brought him.

“You just have to get used to it” Avdol said, equally relaxed as the rest “Once you do, you will understand how wonderful this country is”

“I like this place” Jotaro confessed, also relaxed by the air India had brought them “It’s not that bad…”

“Really, Jotaro?!” the grey-haired male happily asked, a bit surprised to hear those words coming out from his usually stoic grandson “Are you being serious?!”

At that, Jotaro didn’t answer, he just keep quiet for how excited his grandfather had gotten by just speaking the truth so he decided to just say nothing and look back at Noriko, who was immersed in reading a book as they speak, but he could tell she was listening at the conversation by the smile she was fighting so hard to hide and the occasional glares she gave.
“Stop teasing him, Jojo” Caesia softly scolded her husband, smiling when he whined about him wanting to bond with their grandson and that it wasn’t his fault that said grandson was so hard to read.

“What a cultural shock…” Polnareff sighed as he closed his eyes after drinking his tea “Will I start liking it when I get used to it?” he asked himself out loud, bending to pick up his bag and standing up from his seat “Well… They say humans are traditional animals…”

With that, he turned to the waiter that was with them to ask something he had been dying to ask “Where is the bathroom?”

“Over there” the man told him, using his hand to present the direction.

“Polnareff” Joseph called for him as the Frenchman gave a couple of steps, having recovered from his whining and noticed his retracting form.

“Yes?”

“What are you going to eat?”

“You decide” he told them as he looked back at them from above his shoulder, making finger guns with one hand as he smirked “But I hope it’s something special, some splendid and elegant dish worthy of a Frenchman like myself”

At that, Joseph stared at the walking back with his jaw open in shock, not believing that he had just said that, receiving some pats in the back from his wife's part.

“It means that he doesn’t care as long as he can eat it…” Noriko said as she grabbed a menu and opened it, looking for something to order as the rest stared at her in shock and surprise for her words, only looking up at the waiter to start ordering when she decided what she would want “Excuse me…”
In his way to the bathroom, Polnareff was stopped by the waiter and given a pole, something that weirded him out but got into the place, getting in a little uncertain but relaxing almost immediately when he found a perfectly normal toilet so he pulled down his pants and boxers to do his own, that was until he felt something biting his ass, ripping a scream coated in both frighten and pain.

“Was that Polnareff?” Caesia casually asked as she heard a scream coming from where the Frenchman had gone, with Joseph’s head resting on her shoulder as he spoke with Avdol.

“Yup” Noriko replied as she kept reading her book.

“Should we worry about him?” the blonde asked again as she took a sip from her teacup.

“I think he can manage pretty well” Noriko replied with a playful smile, making the blonde chuckle as she agreed with her, both of them sharing a knowing grin before resuming what they were doing as they waited for their food.

Screaming all the way out and all the way down as he desperately tried to put on his pants, Polnareff shot out of the room, making the waiter from before to spin around and give him a confused look.

“Is there something wrong, sir?”

“D-Don’t come with those things to me!” he shouted at the other, getting up fast and grabbing the man by the collar of his robes, , spinning them around due to his strength to point at the bathroom
“T-The toilet…!” he stuttered for how fresh the memories from some seconds ago were “T-The toilet…” he tried again “There is a pig sticking its head in the toilet!”

“These type of toilets are very rare in India and by a design fault, it ended up very close to the lower pigsty” the waiter explained as the silver-haired man tried to process what he was listening “So… When they are hungry, they stick their heads out from the toilet”

“T-That’s not what I wanted to know…” he said, completely panicked before a dreadful feeling took him when he processed the information “W-Wait… What?” he asked “Then… these pigs eat…”

He was so shocked so all he could do was stare wide eyed at the pig as he pointed at it “That’s why there is a pig in there?!”

“That’s why I gave you the stick” the man retorted as it picked the thing up that rested in a wall “Like this…” and then, he hit the head of the pig hard enough to make it cry and pull its head back “See? Now you can use the bathroom while the pig recovers from the hit…”

After more unnecessary information was given to him, the Frenchman was left alone once again and the stick was back on his hands while he wished him luck to do his thing.

“W-Wait! Don’t leave me alone!” he shouted at the closed door, turning to look back fearfully at the toilet, hearing the pained sounds of the pig from before “I think that I’ll never be able to get used to it…”

Without second thoughts, he walked to a wall and dropped the stick and walked back to the sink, sighing heavily as he looked at his reflection in the mirror “I’ll suck it up till we reach the hotel…”

“Sorry we were late” he heard the waiter’s voice from afar, making him lean to his side to look out towards the table, watching as the food was placed in the table, his sign to hurry up.

“Damn!” he cursed, turning to stand straight in front of the sink, ready to finish washing his hands and go back to the table.

He picked up a wet towel and whipped his face with it to clean it.

As he pulled down the towel, he caught sight of a large arm resting against the window behind him, watching as the arm started to raise as a dark figure started to rise with a menacing aura all over him.
Polnareff immediately turned back with his fighting pose full in display to face the enemy, but came across nothing, surprising him.

“I-It left?!” he stuttered, completely confused as he approached the window to take a look outside. “I’m sure I saw something weird in this place” finding nothing, he dropped his fighting pose and mumbled “It must have been my imagination”

At that, he closed his eyes as he returned back to the sink with a smile on his face “Even though it’s expected since there was a pig on the toilet…” as he whipped his forehead with his arm, he walked to sink once again “It doesn’t surprise me that I’m imagining a monster leaning out of the window…”

Once in front of the sink and the mirror, he leaned into it with two hands placed at each side of the sink while the water kept falling from the tap “So this is culture shock of India…”

As he opened his eyes and looked at his reflection, his smile was completely whipped away when he saw the figure back into the window, opening it with a screeching sound as it started to crawl into the room.

“W-What?!” he shouted in surprise, turning back towards the window to find nothing so he turned back to watch back at the mirror, finding the figure back again in the room, confusing him even further.

At this, he looked back and forth twice, from mirror to window, completely horrified “W-What is this?!” he shouted as he finally understood “I can only see it in the mirror! This is the mirror Stand that was told to Jotaro!”

“I-I’m in trouble…” he mumbled to himself after he turned to watch and found nothing with him as the Stand kept approaching him “I’m in big trouble!”

The silence was tense as the Stand crossed it’s bandaged arms in front of its mouth and pulled out a sharp blade from its gloved wrist, alerting the silver-haired man of the attack.

“**SILVER CHARIOT!”**

With the call of its name, the armored Stand came from behind Polnareff and thrusted its rapier to the mirror, shattering it to pieces and making the enemy Stand disappear as the user breathed heavily.

“W-What the hell was that?!” he questioned out loud as his emotions ran wild all over his mind while he looked down at the overflowing sink with shattered glasses “Goddamn it!”
Meanwhile, Jotaro, who was about to take a bite of his own food, looked at the direction of a sudden sound that called his attention by the corner of his eye, finding a very distressed looking Polnareff, who looked all over the place with desperation.

“A Stand!” he shouted as he clenched his hold on his bag “Where is its user?! Who is it?!” he frantically asked as his gaze turned to the hands of the other customers with a wild look “The man with two right hands…”

The five of them watched as the Frenchman bite down his words and ran to the front door in his hurry, a clue for them to follow him, their hunger and food forgotten in the table as they ran behind him due to the world “Stand” that caught their attention.

“There is so many people… Goddamn it!” they heard him hiss with his back turned to them.

“What is going on, Polnareff?” Joseph asked the young man as he approached him, serious by the whole thing since the attitude he was pulling wasn't the one he was used to.

“What is going on?” Avdol asked as he stood behind Joseph, with the teenagers at each side and Caesia beside Noriko.

“If that…” Polnareff started to say, clearly affected by whatever that had happened to him “If that was his Stand, then… That means he is finally here!” he stated with a fist up, one he tightened in anger and a sharp look that the rest couldn’t see “Jotaro… The Stand user of the mirrors is here!”

At the statement, Jotaro frowned, pulling his guard up at the sudden appearance of their enemy.

“The bastard that killed my sister!” he hissed in hate as his grip on his fist turned tighter “The bastard that trampled the life, the soul and the pride of my sister! Finally… I can finally face him!”
“The man that you want to get revenge of it’s here?” the grey-haired male asked again with the same seriousness.

At the question, the Frenchman turned to look back at them from above his shoulder, showing them his frown “Mister and Miss Joestar, from now on, I’ll act on my own…”

Even when they had known it from the beginning, Polnareff’s words surprised all of them, ripping from them choked sounds of surprise from the back of their throats as all of them suddenly tensed since they knew what it meant to face a Stand by one’s own.

“Now that I know that that bastard is here, I won’t wait for him to come to me” he explained, turning his head to stop looking at them so he could show them that this was their end “I would be in disadvantage if I allowed him to attack me, and that isn’t my thing! I’ll find him first and kill him!”

“Even when you don’t know his looks nor his Stand?” Noriko asked him a little skeptical, both worried for him and skeptical that he could be so dumb for choosing that path.

She knew that Polnareff could be a careless airhead, but she expected more reasoning from his part since they were talking about his sister’s murder and they had to be extremely careful if they wanted to defeat him.

“Knowing that he has two right hands is enough for me!” the silver-haired male snapped at her with a serious look on his face “And, besides, he knows that I’m going after him…” he firmly added as he side looked back at them “He won’t be able to sleep knowing that I’m looking for him!”

And then, he fully gave his back to them and started to walk away “See you”.

Silence came crashing down between the five remaining Crusaders as they watched Polnareff depart away from them, but it didn’t last long as it was interrupted by one of them.

“You will go for wool and return home as shorn” Avdol quoted as he stared dead serious at the Polnareff’s back, his deep voice showing how much he disagreed with his planning and how disappointed he was.

“What did you say?” the silver-haired man tensely asked as he stopped his walking and looked
back at the Egyptian with an annoyed look on his face, clear that he had caught the double meaning behind his words and he had been offended for it.

“What you heard”

“Are you insinuating that I’m going to lose?”

“Exactly” Avdol confirmed as he was approached by the other, not breaking the eye contact he had established with him, not daring to break his serious marron stare into angered blue “Don’t you understand that he attacked you to separate you from us?” he remarked the obvious as he also pointed a finger to the said man “I won’t allow you to slip away from the group, Polnareff”

But the Frenchman wasn’t going to accept it so he leaned further and slapped away the other’s finger “Listen to me, I’ll leave it very clear to you…” he said with his gritted teeth as he pointed at the other with a finger “I never cared in the least for DIO”

That really caught Avdol unguarded as he unconsciously took a step back, surprised by his outburst and for how selfish the other was being.

“I told you in Hong Kong that I was going to just join you to get my revenge” he reminded him, looking by the corner of his eye to the Joestar family members and Noriko too so they could get it too “Mister and Miss Joestar and Jotaro should know it very well…”

At that, Joseph looked away from the scene as Caesia clenched her fist inside the pocket of her pants while Jotaro only stared, the three of them knowing very well what Polnareff meant, and accepting that he was right but that didn’t mean they weren’t disappointed for his choice of going by himself.

“I have been alone from the very beginning! I have always fought alone!”

“How selfish!” Avdol angrily snapped as he furiously looked at Polnareff, stepping to the front, forcing the two of them to stand face to face and really close “Have you forgotten that DIO washed your brain?! Have you forgotten that DIO is the cause of all of this?!”

“You’ll never understand what it feels having your sister killed!” Polnareff snapped back, clearly
fired up by the Egyptian’s words and pissed off “The last time you saw DIO you escaped like a coward!”

Maybe he was very into his own rage, but he didn’t notice the sudden shift in the other’s form “A coward like you will never understand what I feel!”

“What did you say?” Avdol hissed as he tried to grab the other but failed since his hands were slapped away.

“Don’t touch me!” Polnareff snarled back again as he used his elbow to keep the other male away. “You defeated me back in Hong Kong by pure luck… Don’t lecture me”

“You-!”

“Did I piss you off?” he asked, looking back at Avdol with the same fire burning on his blue eyes. “Then let me remind you that I’m even more pissed off than you!” he snapped back “You always act as if you were the more mature of all of us, Avdol!”

“You are-!” Avdol hissed as he drew back his arm to hit him and attacked, but he was stopped by Joseph’s deadly grip on his arm “Mr. Joestar!”

“Enough” the oldest Joestar stated with seriousness coating his voice, looking at his friend with his eyebrows furrowed “Let him leave, we can’t stop him at this point…”

“No” Avdol refused as he let his arm go limp in the Joseph’s hold and dropped them beside him. “I’m just disappointed of him…” he admitted with remorse tainting his voice, watching Polnareff spit “I thought that he wasn’t that kind of person…”

Not knowing what to say or how to proceed after the tense moment, the rest watches as Avdol closes his eyes and lets out a disappointed sigh as sweat makes its presence known on his forehead.

“It’s true that I ran away in fear…” he admitted as he looked down at the ground “But that’s why I believe that we can win” he stated with conviction before looking up as his marron eyes made contact and locked with blue ones one last time “And I’m also sure you will lose…”

“Quoi?” Polnareff asked at those words as he approached him “Then I can also confirm
With that, the Frenchman finally walked away from the scene, walking between the crowd of people that had stayed still to watch the whole exchange, walking and walking away till he was sure that they had lost him between the sea of people that returned to their ways.

Meanwhile, in a desert part of India, a giant elephant ran around in a straight line with a blonde male and a noirette female seated on its loin as they traveled, coming to a stop when the blonde man used the whip he had and slammed it in one of the animal's sides.

The man in question had long and straight blonde hair and was dressed in a complete cowboy outfit from head to toe, hiding his face with the hat that rested on the top of his head.

Meanwhile, the woman looked young and beautiful, wearing an entire traditional Hindu dress that covered her thin form as she clutched the man's shirt on a strong hold, refusing to let go of him.

“Get off” he ordered the woman, slapping the elephant to indicate it that it had to kneel as he continued to speak with the female “I came to meet with a friend…”

Obedient, the animal kneeled and the woman got off while the blonde male looked at her by the corner of his eyes.

“You can go back on your own now” he told her before the giant animal stood, ready to leave, but she wasn’t going to have it.

“Made me your wife, please!” the girl begged as she leaned forward into the elephant, nor wanting to watch him leave her and desperate to keep him “I’ll attend you for the rest of my life” at that, she breathed heavily as she shook her head, ready to drop to her knees if need to keep her lover by her side “Just say what you want from me” she begged as she looked up back at him with begging eyes “Please! Allow me to stay by your side!”

“Don’t be stupid” he scolded her as he looked down at her “You barely are sixteen”
“I’m on marriageable age!” she corrected him, desperate as her eyes filled with tears as she locked her purple gaze with her loved one’s “I love you”

The man in question kept looking down at the girl before he sighed and jumped down from the elephant, slowly approaching the girl and holding her hands as the setting sun illuminated their moment, like a cliché movie as she looked at him with adoration.

“Listen… I’m just a simple traveler” he started to say as he looked at her with a dead serious expression “I travel each day as if it was the last and one day… I’ll end up dead somewhere”

He noticed that he had hit right in the nail since she leaned forward and opened her mouth to speak, but he quickly placed a finger in front of her lips to shut her up.

“Someone from a good breed as you shouldn’t think of marrying me someone like me…” he dramatically told her, deciding to pull a little more and keep playing with her “No matter how much we love each other…”

“Really?” she hopefully asked, clearly moved by his words as her eyes shone with tears “Do you love me?”

“Yes, you are the only person that I love in this whole world” the blonde man reassured her, patting his own back as he saw her getting even more emotional for his confession “That’s why… It’s because I love you that I can’t marry you” he reminded her as he held her by her thin arms “You understand it, right?”

At her falling expression, he decided to pull his second card “It’s also difficult for me” he softly told her, trying to console her “My heart is shattered…”

When she covered her face in despair with both her hands, he pulled her into a hug “But I’ll come to see you again from time to time to hold you in my arms” he tried to reassure her as he felt something wet on his shirt, a signal to know she was crying and that he had won “That’s enough to make me happy…”

“Yes…” at her replay, he smirked, proud of his success in making her fall to his net.

With quick and precise moves, he jumped back into the giant animal and sat on its loin, holding the brim of his cowboy hat as he looked down at her “Bye” he bid her a dramatical goodbye “I love you…”
Turning back to look at the front, he slapped the elephant to walk away from the girl as she waved at him, closing his eyes as he moved away. He only opened them when the sound of someone laughing reached his ears, turning his head to look at the source of the sound to find a man sitting against a crumpled pillar, hidden in the shadows.

“You shouldn’t be listening to outside conversations” the blonde man scolded the other, making the elephant approach him as he continued to laugh “I bet you are dying to tell me how evasive I am and that there are women like her everywhere…” he listed as he opened his arms with a big smirk on his face “But you don’t know how easy she is to use” he also added “She will do anything for me… She will even die for me…”

Once they were close enough, he pulled down his hat so his look was shadowed by it as his blue eyes met the other man “You already know how I do my thing… Right?” he asked him as he felt the other’s menacing aura all over him “Mister J. Geil…”

At that, J. Geil laughed and opened his fisted hand, revealing his second right hand, proving that he was the two right handed man certain group had been looking for, his look shadowed by his own hat.

“By the way, that Polnareff guy who uses Silver Chariot…” the blonde man started to say, using his whip to point at the other “I heard that he was looking for you by his own…” he informed “What do you want to do?”

But the two handed man didn’t answer, so he continued “Your plan to separate him from the group worked perfectly” he praised as he gave a breathless laugh and grinned as a question popped out on his mind “Do we kill him first?”

But his wicked grin was whipped from his face when he saw a snake hissing at him, making him to shadow his look as the snake moved to attack right away, but he smirked as he stretched an arm and a gun manifested on it, quickly pointing it at the snake when he felt its weight, pulling the trigger and shooting his bullet that fired with a strong wave that ripped the snake’s head from its body, sending it flying to the air.

As its head flew in the air and its reflection was shadowed on a glass bottle that stood in front and beside the seated man, the bandaged Stand from before appeared in the reflection and it quickly turned the snake into pieces of meat after being turned into dust as the Stand user stood up while the blonde cowboy jumped from the elephant’s loin.

“Shall we?” the latter asked as he rearranged his hat “With the help of your Hanged Man and my Emperor, we can kill them all”

With that said, they started to walk into the desert to look for their enemies and finish off what they
were asked to do.

Meanwhile, in a poor hotel, Polnareff sat in the table that was close to the window inside the crappy hotel room to look outside with a conflicted look on his face as the green neon light of one advertisement illuminated his face while the previous events from before and the events from his past flashed into his mind with the image of his dear sister burned on his mind as he slapped his neck when he felt a mosquito bite him.

[STAND NAME] Hanged Man

**Power:** ??? - **Speed:** ???

**Range:** ??? - **Durability:** ???

**Precision:** ??? - **Growth Potential:** ???

[STAND MASTER] J. Geil

The next day, the remaining Crusaders sat around a circular table while they ate their breakfast, all of them with hard-to-read expressions on their faces as the air around them was both tense and kinda depressing while the rain fell outside of the hotel they were staying, catching Joseph’s attention as he looked at the empty seat beside him.

“So he hasn’t come back…” he mumbled with a heavy weight on his voice, making the rest look at
As soon as he woke up, Polnareff ran around all over the Hindu streets as he threw questions at each person he came across with about the two right handed man, not caring about the weather or the possible cold he was likely to catch since he wanted to get his revenge as soon as he can and finally put her sister to rest.

As he got more and more negatives from the residents about being unable to notice a man with two right hands, he started to grew more impatient as he ran from street to street, refusing to go down without answer.

But that didn't mean he wasn't losing his hopes and, when all seemed to be lost, his answer was given to him.

“What?! You saw him?!” he asked with urgency at the old man who sat against a door, sheltering himself from the rain “Are you sure you saw a man with two right hands?!” he frantically asked him and, at the nod from the poor man, he immediately went down to one knee to face him, gripping his shoulder as gently as he could “Where?!”

At the question, the man lifted a shaky finger and pointed at the other end of the street where a cowboy and a man with a threatening aura all over him that sheltered him from getting wet stood, railing the Frenchman up with just a look as he stood and ran to the street to face them.

“Eh? How weird…” the old man said with confusion on his voice “I don’t see him… He was right there”  

The poor man's words made Polnareff stop on his steps since they weirded him out and alerted him “What?”

“He was beside that man” the old man explained, still pointing at the other two but, as Polnareff looked in said direction, he found only found the cowboy, who stopped walking and stood with arrogance and a smirk on his face.

At that, Polnareff tsked his tongue and looked from one hand to another to find any type of gun
from the man, but all he could see was a cigarette.

“The gun is stronger than the sword” the blonde man randomly said, confusing him as they looked at each other “What a memorable quote…”

“Who the hell are you?!?” he asked him with a hand on his hips, standing tall to be face to face with his new enemy.

“My name is Hol Horse” the blonde, Hol Horse, presented himself and touched the brim of his hat as his greeting “And I’m the man whose Stand corresponds to the Emperor’s card” he explained with a smirk “Lord DIO hired me to get rid of you…”

At that, the silver-haired man sighed, tired of all the little dramatic theater he has been facing with every single enemy that crossed his path.

“Hey, cowboy” he called for him as he pointed at the other with a finger “I don’t need you to present yourself” he clarified, earning himself an annoyed huff of air from the other man “Do you know the man with two right hands?”

“How rude… I was just answering your question…” Hol Horse complained with a hand on his hip and a stretched arm.

“Whatsoever…” he mumbled as he placed his cigarette on his lips “I came with him… He is close”

At that, Polnareff froze and his eyes opened wide, anger and anxiety taking the best hold of him “What?!” he shouted in rage as he looked around, desperate to find the bastard “Where is he?!”

“That’s more than irrelevant” the blonde dismissed as he put a hand on his chest with a smile on his face “I, Hol Horse, will be the one who will take care of getting rid of you…”

“That’s more than irrelevant” the blonde dismissed as he put a hand on his chest with a smile on his face “I, Hol Horse, will be the one who will take care of getting rid of you…”

“But that made Hol Horse laugh, his shoulders shaking with each breathless laugh that shook his body while his arms were crossed over his chest.
“You think that’s funny?”

“Lord Dio said that you were the kind of person that underestimates his opponents and that I won’t have any issue in defeating you” he confessed as he smirked, pointing at the shocked Frenchman with a finger “He was right… I can hardly contain my laughter”

“If I can’t see him till I defeat you, I’m afraid I’ll have to face you…” Polnareff warned with a smirk on his face, confident of his own strength and Stand as he leaned forward with his arms wide open “Come!”

“Do you know the military shogi?” Hol Horse asked, imitating his pose “Tanks are stronger than soldiers, but they’re weak against mines” he quoted with his cigarette still seated between his lips “Well… That’s the way it is in war and since my Emperor is stronger than you, I’ll give you a clue about the abilities of my Stand before we fight”

And, with a quick move, he used his hand to cup his chin “The gun is stronger than the sword” he quoted again with a smirk “What a memorable quote…”

“What are you trying to tell me?” Polnareff demanded to know with a frown on his face, clearly not having caught the hidden message.

“My Stand is a gun” the blonde revealed with a grin on his face “A sword will never defeat a gun”

“What?! What’s wrong with your tail?!” he mocked with a hand behind his ear to remark his mockery before he broke into hysterical laughs, being joined by his enemy as both of them held their stomach and laughed.

They continued like that for a whole minute, being watched by the confused crowd that was surrounding them but stopped when a single water drop hit a puddle of water, both of them throwing knives at each other with their stares.

“I will kill you!” they promised each other.

“Don’t underestimate me, Polnareff!” Hol Horse warned in a shout as his Stand manifested on his stretched hand, surprising the silver-haired man when he was pointed at by the weapon “I told you
that you would lose!"

And then, the blonde pulled the trigger and shot a single bullet that Polnareff stared at, letting it get close to him before he called out for Silver Chariot.

“By taking off its armor... That bullet is nothing!” Polnareff reassured himself as Silver Chariot stood in front of him, completely stripped from its armor as it let its rapier shot towards the bullet but, before it could touch it, the bullet changed its straight course and continued its initial course, much to his surprise.

“What?!” he shouted in shock as the bullet got closer and closer, unable to move since his shock had froze him “I-Impossible! It changed its trajectory! N-No!”

“`The bullet is part of my Stand…” Hol Horse told himself with a smirk “It never crossed you that underestimating me would cost you your life…”

From there, everything seemed to be moving in slow motion to Polnareff as the bullet took over its course towards the middle of his head, ready to pierce his skull and brain to kill him but, before it could touch him, heavy footsteps echoed around him as a certain man came running towards him, ready to pull him away from any danger.

“Polnareff!” it was Avdol, who immediately tackled the said man, making both of them fall backwards, surprising Polnareff and Hol Horse as the two fell while the bullet failed.

“What?! Avdol?!” the silver-haired man asked still in shock as he looked down at the shaking man.
“I came to look for you because you had me worried and look what happened!” Avdol scolded the younger as they looked at each other “You are too confident, Polnareff!”

“W-Worried?” he asked, confused as he stood, recovering his anger from before, feeling hurt for something he couldn’t understand “Goddamn it! You came to give me another one of your lectures?!”

“The enemy knows everything about you!” Avdol continued to scold as he stood up, giving his back to their blonde enemy “You said that you have lived by your own till this very moment, but you won’t be able to win without help!”

“What an unwelcomed nuisance” Hol Horse whined after he caught the cigarette he had previously threw upwards, willing his bullet to return towards the two arguing males.

“Step aside, Polnareff!” the Egyptian indicated the other as they looked up at the bullet once they had notice it getting back to them “The bullet is returning! Magician’s Red!”

The fire-bird Stand came out with a its loud cry, ready to destroy the little object “I’ll melt it!”

At that, behind their back, Hol Horse smirked at the pieces of his plan seemed to be falling right into place.
Meanwhile, in another street far from the three other males, Joseph and Caesia ran in the middle of the street, avoided each people that crossed their path, alongside with the objects and animal that also came across them, looking around to find their friends.

“That Avdol... He really went to look for Polnareff...” Joseph cursed under his breath as they kept running, his mind wavering around and clueless of Avdol's reasoning.

In another street, Jotaro looked out around to find the others, finding no one in sight.

As for Noriko, who had also been running around to find Polnareff and Avdol, came to a stop as she looked around to find the Joestar trio.

“Where are they? Mister Avdol? Polnareff?” she anxiously asked herself while her amethyst eyes roamed around to find them at the end of another street “I have a bad feeling about this...”

“Hey! There is some fight going on over there!”

At those words, the redhead snapped her head at the source of the voice and ran till she rounded the corner the man was pointing at, stopping completely frozen on her steps when she was able to catch Avdol’s reflection in a puddle of water, watching in horror as a completely bandaged Stand came from behind as it grabbed the man, immobilizing him as it pulled out its blade to only stab Avdol's back and buried it deeper, dragging blood out of the hole it left behind when the Stand pulled it out.

“The puddle…” Avdol managed to choke out as he look above his shoulder to see his injury.
Once again, time seemed to be moving in slow motion as the bullet from earlier came down and pierced Avdol’s forehead, right in the middle, throwing him backwards by the force of the hit as blood exploded around him.

“What?!” Polnareff shouted completely shocked and wide eyed as the Egyptian finally hit the ground as his scarf flew around till it fell in front of the puddle of water, making the Stand in it disappear.

“**Mister Avdol!**” Noriko finally managed to scream as she ran towards the fallen man to check him while the crowd around them screamed in fear and shock.

“Wow… I’m really lucky today!” the blonde cowboy said as he looked at his Stand with pride “My gun and J. Geil’s mirrors aren’t the best option against Avdol’s flames so we thought he would be the most difficult opponent… What a luck!” he celebrated “There aren’t more pieces to fear in this military shogi game…”

“Mister Avdol…” Noriko whispered as she pulled the man’s limp body on her lap, arranging him so he could be in a better position but gasping in horror when she touched something wet with her hand, moving it so she could examine it, finding it completely soaked with Avdol’s blood.

“**H-He must be just injured**” she tried to calm herself as she stared wide eyed at the man she was holding “**It’s nothing serious, right?**” she reassured herself “**He will talk… He will open his eyes in any moment… Right, Mister Avdol?**”

As she grew desperate at every second that passed, she started to move him to get him to wake up, trying and trying to wake him up so she could prove he was still alive “**He will wake up, right?**”

But desperation started to wrap all over Noriko as she stared down hopelessly at the man she was crowding inside her arms, unable to catch any type of raise of his chest nor anything that could tell her that he was still alive...

“Mister Avdol, wake up!” she cried out, holding onto his body, growing more and more desperate as the burning sensation of tears started to bother her eyes “Please! Mister Avdol!”

When no answer came from him, she shakily but gently put him down on the ground, letting him rest in it as smoke left his body, making her look down at her lap in complete despair for the loss of a dear friend that she was unable to save.
“I-It’s impossible… He couldn’t have fallen so easily” she shakily mumbled, refusing to believe that the man she looked up to due to his wisdom and more, someone she considered as a friend, could have fallen like that, murdered in cold blood “He couldn’t have fallen so easily!”

She heard Polnareff spitting and throwing sand away from him, listening as he turned around to give his back to them “That’s what he gets for coming with his lectures… Just look at yourself!”

At those words, rage filled Noriko as she looked up at him with anger “What…?” she started to ask, trying to keep her anger in check and avoid strangling him “What are you saying, Polnareff?!” she almost hissed out with rage “Mister Avdol was worried-!”

“Who asked for his help?!” Polnareff snapped at her, cutting her short “He was nothing more but a meddler and he was killed for being too slow!” he stated as he threw his arm around “People like him are a burden… That’s why I told him I was going alone!”

“Bastard…” she hissed in hatred, completely pissed off by his disrespectful attitude to their dead friend “He just saved your life! How dare you?!”

She was angry and was ready to fight him in her friend’s honor but she stopped shaking with rage when she saw a drop of water fall to the ground, wetting it and turned it darker, being followed by one after one, making her look up as her violet eyes took into the Polnareff’s shaky shoulders as he choked in his sobs and wore a look of pure distress.

“It’s overwhelming…” he choked out with so much feelings on his trembling voice that made the redhead shiver, locking her amethyst eyes with his blue ones, watching in shock as large rivers of tears fell from his tearful eyes to his cheeks “Having to watch him die like that…”

“Polnareff…” she whispered his name in a soft breath, unable to find the right words to say at how expressive he was being, feeling her eyes burn again with unshaded tears.

“You don’t know how overwhelming it is!”
thank you so much for reading!
I really appreciate all your kind comments as well as your constructive criticisms

you can follow me in twitter: softtennie
and you can also follow me on instagram: sxftbinnie

I'm not that active on twitter but I will try for all of you and, on instagram, I post (occasionally) some aesthetic for this series!
Chapter Summary

Well done, Polnareff...

Chapter Notes

Hello everyone, it's author-sama...

I'll be brief... I have to announce that I will be taking some weeks off from the updating schedule.

I'm about to start the last few weeks of my uni semester and editing the chapters it's gonna be hard so I decided to make a hiatus till things go back to normal, updating from time to time.

Don't panic, it won't take long... I expect 3 or 4 weeks as much, and after that I have a month vacation where I expect to write the chapters from the second season and finish editing the chapters that I have already done.

I'm sorry if you don't like the waiting but I decided that it would be the best for me and for the fic. I beg you to understand.

Last details are down at the ending notes so, without furthermore... ENJOY!

See the end of the chapter for more notes

After Polnareff’s overwhelmed shout, he turned his back to Noriko to cry in peace, his body shaking with each sobs that was ripped from his body while the said girl closed her eyes and her body shook as she silently sobbed, both of them mourning their dear friend Avdol.

“He tried to be brave but ended up dying on the spot” Hol Horse commented in a disrespectful matter that called Noriko’s attention as she looked angrily at him from her kneeled position, watching him drop his cigarette to the ground “Oh well... Death has always been a sudden event...” he smirked, looking at them as he stepped on his cigarette to turn it off “I think that’s normal for people to die without even saying goodbye...”

Meanwhile, as the blonde continued to press their bottoms with his words, Polnareff started to shake with rage as a growing hate for the other started to bloom on his heart as his fist tightened, falling into his tramp.
“I know that I’m saying obvious things but, come on…”

At that, the Frenchman used his forearm to whip his tears, throwing an emotionless look to the cowboy as he started to approach him, ready to beat him and avenge Avdol, alerting Noriko, who had noticed the man’s intentions.

“Polnareff! Don’t fall for his provocation!” she warned him as she stood, not bothering to whip the dirt from her naked knees, not believing that he could fall so easily as he kept approaching the other man “Haven’t you understood?! Mister Avdol told you not to fight alone!”

At the mention of their fallen friend, Polnareff froze and stopped walking, the redhead the chance to get through his stubbornness.

“And if you do nothing more but ignore him…” she pressed, looking him intensely to get him to understand “You want to get your revenge even if it cost you your life!” she snapped, as she looked down at her fallen friend to give him the hint “Mister Avdol knew about it! That’s why he came looking for you!”

“What do you want me to do?!” he snapped at her in a hiss as he bite down his rage.

“We must retreat!”

At her words, Polnareff snored and his shoulders tensed, offended by her suggestion since he wasn’t going to go down without a fight, less leave when he had another reason to fight for.

“Avdol was stabbed in the back with no mercy…” he reminded Noriko with rage as the aura of his Stand seemed to be coming out of him “My sister was murdered without being able to put a fight!” he snapped back “Do you want me to repress my feelings and escape?!”

“‘You can’t face them without knowing how their Stands work!’ ‘Don’t fight if they are going to kill you!’” she quoted her friend as she lashed out at the Frenchman, desperate to make him understand but frustrated for his attitude “That’s what Mister Avdol wanted to tell you!”

“Come on, little Pol Pol!” Hol Horse taunted, calling the Frenchman with a finger as he smirked.
“You are…!” Polnareff hissed in hate and his raised fist started to shake in rage.

“**Polnareff!**” Noriko snarled at him to draw his attention away from their enemy “Walk towards me slowly” she instructed him with seriousness, using a thumb to point behind her “We will escape in that van…”

“A-Are you asking me to hold back?!”

At his question and stupidity, Noriko, if they weren’t in such a tense and critical moment, would have rolled her eyes and hit the shit out of him for being so stubborn, but she held herself back as he breathed heavily after seeing him take a look at Avdol’s body till it evened down and closed his eyes.

“O-Okay…” he shakily agreed before an evil laugh started to echo around them.

“**Hey, Polnareff!**” the owner of the laugh called from a single direction, making Polnareff look at the source of the sound coming from a mirror, watching in horror as the bandaged Stand from before started to get out of the puddle of water while its user laughed “Avdol died because of you! It seems that you own him one, don’t you?!”

Turning sharply, he found nothing behind him so he turned back to the mirror, finding the enemy Stand approaching him to his utter surprise.

“If it weren’t for you… He would still be alive!”

“Bastard!” he snarled at both Stand and Stand user as they laughed, looking back to Hol Horse with anger “**Where is his body?!**”

“Polnareff! Calm down!” Noriko snarled back, making him pause and look back at her from above his shoulder before looking back at the mirror as their enemy’s laugh reached his ears.

“But… Let me tell you that you shouldn’t feel sad, but happy… You will meet him very soon” J. Geil continued to taunt as his Stand’s body slowly raised to its full height and pulled out its blade “When I kill you… You will keep each other’s company in the Other World”
“Your sister was very beautiful, Polnareff…” he continued to say through his Stand as he laughed and his Stand moved the blade in slow motion till it covered its bandaged mouth “When you join her, you should ask her… How I killed her…”

Completely railed up, Polnareff screamed in rage at the mention of his sister and the disrespectful manner he was talking about her, forgetting about the redhead, who was more desperate and frustrated than before as she knew what was about to come.

“Polnareff! Don’t fall for his provocations!” she shouted as a warning to let him know she was being serious “That’s exactly what he wants!”

But it was too late since Silver Chariot came to life in the air when it launched itself from its user’s back, thrusting its rapier forward to destroy the mirror as Polnareff screamed in rage “Bastard!”

But his angered decision proved to be a failure when he caught sight of the bandaged Stand in one of the shattered pieces, hearing his laugh as it stood behind him.

“Your Chariot can’t cut my Hanged Man…” he mocked before the mirror slipped in two, appearing in only one of the sides “I’m inside the mirror! Your Stand can’t get into it… That’s the whole reason!”

At that, Polnareff felt the weight of the Stand’s hand above his shoulder and at each side of his neck as he trembled with rage while Silver Chariot stood behind him.

“Are you angry? I bet you are…” J. Geil taunted him as he laughed and Silver Chariot vanished from sight “Hey, Hol Horse!” he called for the blonde man “Shot him and finish him for once!”

“Aye, aye, sir!” Hol Horse happily complied with an arm stretched, calling for his Emperor that appeared and rested on his hands as the silver-haired male trembled, held in place by the other Stand as the blonde shot.

“Die!” J. Geil hissed at him as his Stand lifted an arm to stab him with its blade to assure his death and seal his destiny.

Seeing this and coming to the conclusion that things went from bad to worse, Noriko quickly
formulated a plan and called for her Hierophant Green, silently but quickly making it start summoning its green liquid as the attention of the enemy was busier with the Frenchman and, once ready, she voiced out strong and loud:

“**EMERALD SPLASH!**”

“What?!?” the two enemy Stands shouted in shock as Polnareff was hit hard with the emerald projectiles Noriko and Hierophant Green had thrown, ripping him from the Hanged Man’s grip and out of Hol Horse bullet reach as he was sent flying away from them.

“What?!” Hol Horse shouted in shock, still not believing what he witnessed as he stared down at the fallen man “*She shot Polnareff!*”

J. Geil said nothing but looked at the sudden sound of something that called his attention, catching sight of Noriko, who was driving the van from before with a serious expression on her delicate face, kicking open her door as Polnareff lifted his head, watching as she offered her hand to him to send him the message, which he caught when they joined hands, being dragged away by the redhead.

“*Kakyoin was your name, right?*” Hol Horse asked out loud as he coughed and waved away the dust of sand the van had lifted when both Crusaders made their escape “You don’t do it so bad…”

He immediately summoned his Stand and pointed at the van, but it was already way too far from his reach “They are out from my Stand’s range” he complained as he made his Stand disappear while he looked at the escaping duo “Even if I hit them, the bullet will have already lost all its potential…”

It was frustrating to think about that but the feeling quickly left him when he looked down at the shattered pieces, finding that the Stand from before was no longer in there.

“J. Geil must have gone after them…” he commented as he walked towards the biggest broken piece of mirror, stepping in one of them in the process “*He really must want to kill Polnareff*…”
Using the rearview mirror, Noriko looked back with a heavy heart at Avdol's corpse as they left him behind.

Firmly telling herself that the time to properly mourn him will come, she looked back to the front with her serious face completely intact as she kept driving them away from their enemies with a tense silence between them.

“I-I’m sorry, Kakyoin” Polnareff broke the silence as he apologized to the teen, closing his eyes as regret finally crashed into him “I-I thought…” he tried to say, stopping for a second before he opened his tearful eyes “I thought that dying wouldn’t matter if I avenged my sister, but now I understand…”

Noriko, wisely, kept quiet but paid attention to him, wanting to hear what he wanted to say before she intervened and her opinion of him changed.

“Now I understand what Avdol felt…” he confessed with a heavy heart and closed eyes “His worry won’t be in vain” he promised before looking back to the redhead with a serious look on his bloody face “I’ll fight to keep living…”

“Do you really mean it?” she asked him, giving him a side sharp look, wanting to make sure that his words were real and if he was truly sorry.

“Yes”

With the answer she needed delivered, Noriko placed all her strength onto her right arm and slammed her elbow hard into Polnareff’s face, right in the middle, feeling his nose cracking under it as blood poured out of his injured and, most likely, broken nose.

“You can consider it like a sign that we made up, Polnareff…” she darkly told him with her head tilled to one side, showing him the tears at the corner of her eyes.

“Y-Yes…” he agreed as blood kept coming out of his nose and his whole face twitching from the
When they come for us... We will defeat them together” she promised as she blinked the tears away and looked at the front after watching Polnareff collapse from the hit “I won’t let them hurt any of you…”

Like before, silence took over them as Noriko drove them away from the city, away from anyone so they could prevent others from getting hurt.

Meanwhile, Jotaro, Joseph and Caesia stood in front of Avdol’s body with unreadable looks on their faces as they stared down at their fallen friend.

“Avdol... You…” Joseph whispered, clearly loss of words as he kneeled in the floor to be close to his friend.

As for Jotaro, he picked up the bloody scarf that had once been wrapped around the Egyptian’s neck, tightening his grip on it as he shielded his eyes with the help of his hat and his body shook with rage.

And for Caesia, she held an empty look on her green eyes no matter how unreadable her face remained while her hand trembled from the deep despair she was feeling.

“I could have sworn that I went through him with my rapier…” Polnareff grumpily mumbled to Noriko as they drove in a rural and desert street after having recovered his senses, relieving the past experiences from some moments ago, whipping away the blood from his nose “But I didn’t kill him... I did nothing”
As he looked up, he caught sight of the rearview mirror and immediately ripped it away and moved it so the reflecting part was flipped and away from his face.

“Even if I break the mirror, his Stand, Hanged Man, can attack me from its fragments…” he said out loud for the redhead to let her know what he had notice in his previous encounters “He is capable of attacking me inside the mirror but my Stand can’t get into it and how can I attack him when he is in the mirror’s world?” he asked, completely lost and with a frown on his face as he threw the mirror out of the car “Damn it!”

“Polnareff” Noriko called for him as she looked straight ahead “You keep saying things like “inside the mirror” or “the mirror’s world”, but there isn’t a world inside of them” she pointed out as she looked at him with a serious look “Those are things from fairy tales”

“What are you even saying?! You saw it too!” Polnareff snapped at her, completely offended by her skepticism when he knew she had seen it too “You can only see him inside the mirror, but not in the real world!”

“Yes…” Noriko agreed with his words, but she was still skeptical “But what we see in the mirrors is nothing more than the reflection of the light”

“I already know! I don’t need you to tell me that!” he snapped at her like a little child being scolded “Listen… Consider our actual situation” he started, trying to make her reason by finding the right words “If Stand exist… There may be a mirror world!”

“Of course not”

“Why are you so…?!?”

“For what you just told me… It’ll take us to solve the mystery of the Hanged Man” she seriously concluded with a stoic face, interrupting his nagging and possible insult “If we have to use a Stand to defeat another Stand, then we can say that-”

A sudden flash of light called the redhead’s attention as it reflected on one side of her face, making her interrupt herself and looked down at the wheel, staring intensively at the reflecting veneer till. With another flash of light, the bandaged figure of the Hanged Man was reflected, ripping a surprised gasp from her as the Stand made it to the back and dashed to them.
By instinct, Noriko turned back to prove it but found nothing behind them so she quickly looked back down at the veneer, finding it very close to them to her comfort.

“Polnareff! He is in the wheel’s veneer!”

“What?!”

“He has reached us!” Noriko shouted as the window behind them shattered, throwing the broken pieces all over them.

“Careful!”

As Hanged Man pulled out its blade, the teenage girl quickly turned the wheel and slammed the breaks to avoid its attack, making the van abruptly turn and start spinning around till it collided against a little crag that flipped them over, throwing them both around as the car crashed down, throwing Polnareff out the vehicle while Noriko was slammed right into the van’s ceiling, both of their bodies shaking from the pain the fall had caused.

“A-Are you okay, Kakyoin?!” he asked the girl as he used his shaky arms to start standing.

“I-I slammed my chest but I’m fine…” she answered in a wince as she crawled out of the ruined vehicle so she could also stand with her friend.

While the Frenchman threw a worried look to the girl, a sudden flash of light caught his attention as he saw it shot away from the windscreen towards a smashed rearview mirror and then to the shiny bumper, confusing him till the Hanged Man’s figure manifested in there.

“What?!?” he shouted as it saw it get closer with its blade out, but then screamed in rage and called for his Stand “Chariot!”

Once out, Silver Chariot quickly thrust its rapier and turned the bumper into pieces while an idea popped inside his mind, hoping that it would give both him and Noriko the upper hand as he quickly stood.
“Kakyoin! Get away from everything that reflects light!”

Hearing the warning and watching him run ahead of her, the redhead followed him hot on his heels, jumping behind him so they could hide behind a rock to shield themselves from their enemy, both of them breathing heavily as they tried to calm down from their recent encounter and the rush of adrenaline they just had experimented.

“How the hell! Now I understand it… I recently saw it!” Polnareff started to say as he looked at Noriko’s surprised expression from how confident he sounded “He jumps from mirror to mirror!” he revealed to make her understand “It transfers jumping from one reflecting surface… To another!”

Flashes of what must have happened appeared on his mind as he connected what he just saw with what he had experienced, picturing the perfect image of the bandaged Stand jumping from the puddle of water towards a window and then to more reflecting surfaces, over and over again till it reached them and hide in the car as they made their escape.

“He reached us jumping between reflections!”

“Reflections?” Noriko asked, trying to process what she was told, staring ahead wide eyed as she came to another conclusion “Then it’s made of light!” she stated, still a little unsure of their theory “His Stand’s real identity is light?!”

It was terrifying to think about a Stand having such ability, they were clearly in disadvantage if they were forced to fight in an open field with the sun standing tall and proud above them, which left them wide open to receive any possible attack and huge damage if they weren’t fast.

“Kakyoin!” Polnareff snapped her out of her thoughts “He recently was in the van’s windscreen! He will jump from the windscreen to another surface!” he warned her as he looked back at her after checking out the disaster behind them “Don’t get close to nothing that reflects light!”

At that, another thought appeared on his mind, making him realize another thing their enemy could use as he noticed the girl’s cherry-like earrings “Take off everything that reflects light!”

At that, he started to take of his broken heart earrings while Noriko started to take her own off with the same desperation he was doing it, both of them too busy to notice the little shadow that approached them till its owner spoke.
“Are you okay? Do you need medicaments?”

At the voice, both silver-haired and redhead looked to their side at the source of voice, finding a little kid, who was more than unaware of the dangerous situation at hand they were facing.

“Hey, kid! Go away!” Polnareff shouted his order to the kid so he could just leave “It’s too dangerous!”

“Your van was smashed to pieces…” the boy observed as he approached the duo a little more as he side-looked at the van, making a flash of light appear that caught the Noriko’s attention, who gasped in the back of her throat.

“You are bleeding…” he observed as he leaned a little bit closer to Polnareff, startling him as he stared straight into the boy’s marron eyes.

“What?!”

“Are you okay?”

Feeling tension in the air, the two crusaders kept staring right into the little boy’s eyes, locking eyes with him till they were able to make the Hanged Man’s figure behind them.

“That bastard!” Polnareff snarled in hatred for the dirty trick that had been pulled into them.

“He is in the kid’s eye!” Noriko pointed out, making their enemy laugh like a maniac, clearly satisfied by what he just did and the situation he dragged them to.

“Hey, kiddo! Don’t look at us!” Polnareff ordered the kid as both of them jumped out from the child’s vision field, but failed since he followed them, turning his little body to look at them, frustrating him “I told you to not look at us!”

But once again, the warning fell in deaf ears as the boy kept looking and moving around, following each of Polnareff’s moves as the man jumped and ran from side to side, desperate to get away from J. Geil’s reach so neither him nor Noriko had to hurt the child to avoid getting murdered.
“Stop following me! Damn it!”

“But you are hurt!”

“I’m okay, see?! I’m perfectly fine!” he exasperatedly told the child, flexing one of his muscular arms to dismiss the kid, shushing him away “Now go away!”

“But you are bleeding…”

“Don’t look at me, brat!” he snapped at the child, making him stare wide eyed back at him, resulting in the evil laugh of the Hanged Man as it manifested in the boy’s eye “Fuck you, J. Geil!”

“What will you do?!” J. Geil asked the silver-haired male as the enemy Stand floated behind him when Silver Chariot came to live beside Chariot’s user, completely amused and clearly enjoying the moment “You won’t dare to rip this little boy’s eye with your rapier or will you, Polnareff?!?”

With that taunt, both Stand and Stand user laughed and slapped a hand in the juncture of the Frenchman’s shoulder and neck, choking him for how tight it was gripping him.

“Polnareff!” Noriko shouted his name in alarm, staring wide eyed at the scene in front of her, worried for her friend but unable to do something to help him since her action will likely hurt the child.

“I finally caught you~” J. Geil sing-sang at the move he made, staring at the other through the empty eyes of his Stand “You can’t escape me” he stated, turning his stare more wicked “Not unless you dare to rip this kid’s eye…”

“What a despicable man! It’s unforgivable!” Noriko hissed with hatred at the sight of the Stand pulling out it’s blade, ready to stab Polnareff with it, her raised fist trembled with her barely contained anger for the dishonest moves the other was pulling.

J. Geil continued to laugh, but slowly stopped when Polnareff started to laugh and smirk, pulling two thumbs up towards the redhead, surprising all of the presents.
“Hey, Kakyoin!” he called for her with a confident aura all over him “Don’t say things like those in our actual situation” he jokingly scolded her, leaving her speechless “In moments like this, you should say something like this before you take your revenge…”

And then, he closed his eyes and straightened his whole body, standing proud and tall, showing his confidence in his blue eyes once he opened them “My name is Jean Pierre Polnareff. For my sister’s honor and so the soul of my friend Avdol can rest in peace… I swear I’ll take care of throwing you to the deepest of desperation, J. Geil!”

As he spoke, Silver Chariot reappeared again and flipped around its rapier, standing tall and strong the same way its user did, who looked down at the kid with a smirk “I’m sorry, kid! I’ll buy you a candy later!”

With a quick move, he kicked enough sand towards the boy’s face, startling him in the process.

“Sand got into my eyes!” the kid cried out in pain and distress for the sensation, closing his eyes as a flash of light jumped out of his eye, making Silver Chariot slash it.

“P-Polnareff, he is in your eye…” Noriko stuttered in shock as she noticed the flash of light in the Frenchman’s eyes, staring at the trembling form of their enemy.

“I don’t understand very well how it works, but it moves around at the speed of light, it’s not something that you can follow with your sight” he calmly explained the teen as he looked down at the little boy, who kept rubbing his eyes “Nonetheless… If the kid closed his eyes, it was obvious that he would jump directly to mine”

“I see…” she mumbled, completely impressed by his quick thinking that he shared with her.

“So…” he started with a triumphant smile on his bloody face “While I can predict his trajectory, slicing him will be a piece of cake”

And then, a large gush appeared on the Hanged Man’s chest and blood poured out of it as a scream echoed from behind them, inside a building some meters away from them, revealing the Stand user’s location.

“His user is over there!” he shouted, running in front of the teenage girl who ran beside him, both of them more than ready to finish their enemy off.
“Bastard… Finally…” Polnareff mumbled between each sharp breath he took as he ran “Finally…!”

Once they reached the top of the stairs of the place where they had heard the scream, both Noriko and Polnareff stood in front of a man who they found laying down against a wall, breathing heavily as he covered the large gush on his chest, soaking his shirt with the red liquid that came out from it.

“Finally…!” Polnareff greeted the man, his face twitching for how hard he was fighting to keep bottled up the rush of emotions that washed over him as he faced the man that had taken so much from him “J. Geil!”

Without taking his eyes off the man, he straightened his back and put a hand on his hips, looking down at the other “My name is Jean Pierre Polnareff and I could understand the secret of your Stand”

“It’s a light Stand that moves at an incredible speed that I have no way of catching it…” he admitted but kept his pose “Nonetheless… I can predict it’s trajectory and slice it while it moves so I can also slice you!” he stated as he pointed at the man and then thrust a thumb backwards to point at the redhead “If it weren’t for Avdol and Kakyoin, there’s a good chance you would have killed me by not being able to find out…”

But Kakyoin, who had kept a watchful eye since something seemed off to her from the very beginning when they found the man, felt a dreadful sensation bubbling inside of her when she looked down at the man’s hands and found a left hand instead of a right one.

“Polnareff! That man doesn’t have two right hands!” she shouted in alarm but turned to be too late since, in a blink of the eye, the said silver-haired man started to choke due to a knife being stabbed on his back, dragging blood from the wound “That’s not J. Geil!”

“W-What?!”

“Polnareff!”
Polnareff immediately fell to his knees as pain shot through his whole body for the stab, one of his hands clutching his white pants while the other touched his shoulder, biting down the horrible and agonizing sensation on his back.

“Polnareff!” Noriko screamed as she also dropped to the ground, ignoring the pain that shot on her knees and the dry blood in the corner of her mouth, ripping out the knife from her friend’s back as she looked around to find the source of the attack while other choked.

Her violet eyes roamed all over the place, trying to find J. Geil but found no one in sight, but tensed when a horrible laugh echoed around them, her body and mind getting ready to fight.

“Over here…” the real J. Geil said as he appeared from behind a broken wall, showing his two right hands before he stepped out, revealing his disgusting whole being with a red stain on his shirt “Idiot! I’m J. Geil!”

“Bastard!” Polnareff hissed in hatred as Noriko quickly stood in front of him to protect him from the enemy, also preventing him from doing any kind of stupidity.
“He was nothing more than a traveler that was passing by” J. Geil informed them with a disgusting smirk on his ugly face “I just made him a wound identically to mine with that knife… You fell right into my trap!” he shouted in satisfaction as his victim screamed in frighten “You made a big mistake when you got close to him without even knowing my face!”

“Bastard!” Noriko shouted with hatred and disgust, silently calling for Hierophant Green, who quickly turned into its complete form after coming out in tendrils, standing tall above them “Take this! EMERALD.”

“Hey! Wait a minute!” the man interrupted her, cupping his chin with one of his hands “Look around you…”

His words caught her out of guard and made her stood rooted on her spot, watching wide eyed as he lifted an arm and looked beside them with his void eyes, towards the crowd of males inside the large building that the two crusaders hadn't noticed before.

“Hey! Come!” he called for the males, catching their attention as he presented the duo to them in a courtesy “This young man and lady want to give you some money!”

“What?!” Noriko shouted in shock as Polnareff stood beside her, looking in shock as the males started to approach them, who had wicked looks on their faces.

“They will give us money!”

“Thank you very much!”

“You are very kind!”

“Thank you! Thank you!”

“Thank you very much!”

“You’re wonderful!”
“You should know what that means…” J. Geil darkly said from his position with a visible smirk on his disgusting face.

At those words, Polnareff looked at one man’s eyes, finding Hanged Man in it with its blade out, ready to slice them.

“Do you really think that you could defeat my Stand?!” J. Geil screeched at the Frenchman “Idiot! I’ve long known the weakness of my Stand!”

With that statement, a large gush appeared on Polnareff’s chest, dragging blood before Hanged Man moved to another eye “But if there are many reflective surfaces and you can’t predict their trajectory…” he dreadfully said as the Stand now stood in front of the redhead, slicing a large wound on the arm she had been using to shield her chest, making her hiss in pain “It’s invincible!”

“Don’t look! Don’t look!” Polnareff desperately shouted in panic as Hanged Man continued to move from eye to eye all over them “Don’t look at us!”

“You can’t escape!” their enemy laughed as the Stand appeared in front of him again “What are you going to do?! Kill all of them?!”

More and more large slices appeared all over Polnareff’s body, ripping a long pained scream from his mouth as blood poured out of the multiples wounds, weakening him even more.

“You wasted all your youth looking for me… And all that for this?” he taunted as he pointed at them with a finger “What a boring and lonely life you had had while I, J. Geil, will get away with it with cute girls like your sister and will happily forever after!”

And then, with saliva coming out from a corner of his mouth, he locked eyes with Noriko, who shivered in disgust for the lustful look J. Geil gave her in that moment "Just like your friend over here..."

As Polnareff continued to be stabbed over and over again, Noriko growled in disgust as her sharp
violet eyes stared at the disgusting Stand user, trying to keep herself free from the others male grip as they continued to try to get money out of them, formulating an effective plan to free both of them and make sure her friend got his revenge and she could silence this bastard from making her remember.

“Now that I remember… Your sister moaned really well…” J. Geil continued to laugh as he licked his lips, driving the silver-haired male to a wall as the hatred he felt started to burn his insides, his whole being aching to go to the bastard and pulverize him to death for how he spoke of his little sister “Die!”

“B-Bastard!”

As the tension rose, silence took over the three Stand users while the males surrounding the duo pulled their clothes to get their money, making Polnareff shiver with fire burning in his veins before Noriko’s voice broke the tense air with her melodic but strong voice.

“Polnareff… You shouldn’t speak like that…”

With that choice of words, he turned back and placed his attention to her, finding her standing in front of him with a deadly confidence as she covered her smirk with her delicate hand “You can’t say bastard before getting your revenge…”

With her scolding done, she put down her hand to show him her big smirk “You should say something like this…” she went off as she placed a hand over her wide hip and the other beside her, standing proud in front of him “My name is Kakyoin Noriko. In order to avenge my friend Avdol and for the soul of my friend Polnareff’s sister can rest in peace…”

In what seemed to be a slow motion, the redhead pulled out a golden coin from one of her skirt’s pocket, lifting it up high enough to let it shine under the sunlight “I’ll make you pay with your own life”

The crowd of males gapped at the sight of the coin while J. Geil held a terrified expression on his face and quivered in fear, prove enough that told the teen that the dreadful realization of his soon death had finally hit him.
“Whoever picks up this golden coin can keep it” she informed the rest with her voice booming with confidence as she moved it around in front of their faces, smirking when they followed the movement with their eyes “It’s so shiny that you can see your faces in it!”

“I see… Kakyoin” Polnareff smirking, back to back with the teenager.

With the knowledge that her friend had understood her, Noriko threw the coin up in the air, being followed close by the greedy males, who celebrated and stretched their arms to try to catch it.

“Now all of them are looking to one single spot…” she said, smirking as she looked at the Frenchman from above her shoulder.

“Yeah!” he agreed as they both looked around to find their enemy Stand, finding it inside an old man’s eye.

“Now we know the path Hanged Man will take!” she proudly pointed out, letting Polnareff take the lead as he was meant to do.

“Merci, Kakyoin!” Polnareff congratulated the teen as he threw sand to the old man’s eyes, forcing him close his eyes and shot Hanged Man towards the coin but, before it could reach it, Silver Chariot appeared in front of the other Stand “Now!”

At his command, Silver Chariot sliced its rapier across the other Stand’s face, dragging blood and creating a large gush in its forehead, making J. Geil scream and choke in pain as the other males dropped down to catch the coin, allowing the duo to see him running away from them like the coward he was.

“Stop!” Noriko shouted, jumping outside the circle of males to run after him, with Polnareff hot on her heels.
“It won’t open!” J. Geil cried out in distress as he slammed his hands in the bars of the main gate, turning back as he screamed in frighten, slamming his back against the gate as both Polnareff and Noriko stood in front of him, sealing his fate.

“It seems that the only one that moans is you, J. Geil!” Polnareff said with his fist ready to fight as Noriko stood beside him with her arms crossed below her chest “You will have a lot of time to moan in your way to Hell… But there is something that I can’t let the guardians of Hell do for me and that is…”

Immediately, Silver Chariot manifested beside its user with its rapier ready “The punishment of thousand needles!”

With that shout, the Stand started to slice over and over again J. Geil’s whole body, ripping pained screams from his mouth as blood poured down and out of him, satisfying Polnareff to unthinkable levels as he avenged his sister.

“You don’t know how long I have been waiting for this!” he shouted, willing Silver Chariot to pierce J. Geil’s tongue.

Using the hole as its support before throwing him upwards, Silver Chariot let J. Geil fall right into one of the spikes in the top of the gate, slamming him all the way down due to gravity, completely piercing him from head to toe.

“I’ll let Enma take care of you…”

“So that was the real Hanged Man…” Noriko mumbled, throwing a side look at the dead man, disgusted by him even if he could no longer harm anyone else “He was nothing more but a human scum…”

They stayed silence for a second before Polnareff turned around and started to walk away, closing his watering eyes to keep the tears at bay, a huge wave of relief crashing over him now that he succeed in defending his sister’s honor and giving her the peace she deserved.

“I got my revenge…” was all he said to the teenage girl, feeling her eyes on his back as he walked with a little limp on his walking due all his open wounds.

Noriko softly smiled as she hurried to walk beside Polnareff, glad that both his sister and he could
be at peace, giving him a soft path on his back when she felt that the right moment had come, walking back side to side with him towards the town to reunite with the others as a single thought flashed in her mind.

"You did well, Jean Pierre Polnareff..."

[STAND NAME] Hanged Man

Power: C - Speed: A

Range: A - Durability: B

Precision: D - Growth Potential: D

[STAND MASTER] J. Geil

“Stop right there!” Hol Horse shouted from behind Noriko and Polnareff, making them stop in the middle of the town’s street and slightly look back at him “I finally caught up with you two…”

He stretched an arm and called for his Stand as he laughed, throwing it from one hand to another as he laughed, but he was completely ignored by both crusaders as they gave their back to him without moving from their spot.

“Why are you walking so slow?!” he asked them with a smirk on his face “If you are going to escape, do it as if your lives depended on it, right, J. Geil?”

He shot, hitting a glass bottle but destroying it, making the other two look back at him with stoic looks on their faces.
“Give up!” the blonde advised them “Your lives have come to an end so at least put some kind of resistance! Show me some bravery, damn it!” he shouted as he pointed his gun to another place “Right, J. Geil?”

Hol Horse shot once again, breaking some windows and throwing the glasses messily around in the ground in front of the other two.

Coldly, Polnareff stepped in them, turning it into pieces, making the blonde feel nervous.

“How you listening to me, J. Geil?!”

“I doubt he will listen to you ever again” Polnareff informed the blonde man, pointing at him with a finger and looking at him with a serious expression “He is a little busy receiving his punishment in Hell…”

When Silver Chariot came out, Hol Horse gulped but kept his confident walls up as he tried to find his exit.

“Hey, hey, hey, hey, hey, hey, hey…!” he chanted, closing his eyes as he leaned forward “Don’t lie! You can’t trick me!” he told them, denying the fact as he stood straight “It’s impossible that you could have defeated him! Not even I can face the invincible Hanged Man! Polnareff, your pranks suck!”

“His corpse is some kilometers over there” the silver-haired man calmly informed, pointing at the said direction with a finger “Do you want to see it?”

Finally getting grip of his out, he quickly turned before dashing out “Well, that’s what I will do…”

“Hey! He is trying to escape!”
“I won’t defeat them” Hol Horse told himself as he ran “I’ll be in disadvantage facing them by my own… I’ll have to escape and wait for another opportunity” he thought as he looked at the duo by the corner of his eye “I’m the type of person who works better with a partner, it’s better to be a number two than a number one! That’s my life’s philosophy!” he stated as he ran to a corner “Some problem with that?!"

Sadly, since he was too distracted running away from the other two, he reacted way too slow when he caught the glimpse of a fist coming straight to his face.

“What?!” was all he could ask before the fist connected with his face and threw him backwards.

Noriko and Polnareff, who were running to catch Hol Horse, stopped dead on their tracks when three known figures stepped outside the alley the blonde man wanted to use as his escape route.

“Mister Joestar! Miss Joestar!” Noriko exclaimed their names, relieved to see them, feeling more relief crashing into her as she saw him looking down at the fallen male with his usual scold “Jotaro!”

“We already know about Avdol’s death…” Joseph informed them as he let his crossed arms fall at his sides, finding no point in sugar coating it “Even if his burial was something simple… He is resting underground”

At his words, Noriko looked down, bowing her head in respect for the man while Polnareff gritted his teeth and looked down at Hol Horse, all of them surrounding him so he wouldn’t escape.

“The one who stabbed Mister Avdol was the man with two right hands” Noriko informed them as she looked at the man with a cold look “But what killed him was one of Hol Horse’s bullets… What do we do with him?”

“We make him pay” Caesia suggested with one of her arms coated with Hamon, making Hol Horse
choke a scream by the dark aura that seemed to be all over the older woman.

“I’ll punish him” Polnareff agreed with the light blonde’s idea, walking forward to him as the poor bastard backed away in fear as he cried out when Silver Chariot came out to life “Die!”

Sadly, before he could do any real damage, Polnareff was unceremoniously tackled down by a woman, forcing Silver Chariot to vanish from sight at the sudden attack since its user had been distracted.

“Escape, please, Hol Horse!” the woman shouted at the shocked blonde man “Hol Horse!”

“What is this woman doing?!” Polnareff asked in rage as he tried to escape her hold and finish what needed to be finished.

“I don’t know what is going on, but I’ll always take care of you!” she stated, tightening her grip on the silver-haired man’s waist, receiving dark looks from Noriko, Jotaro and Caesia while Joseph stared at the scene a little shocked “You are my reason to live! Escape, please! Quick!”

“Let me go, bitch!” the Frenchman snarled at the woman, trying to get out of the grip “What’s in your head?!” he asked her in rage, looking up at the rest “Kakyoin! Jotaro! Don’t let Hol Horse escape!”

“Too late…” Jotaro commented, surprising the fallen crusader, who looked at the spot where Hol Horse was supposed to be, who was now seated in a horse, ready to escape.

“Well said, baby!” he congratulated the woman “I will fulfill your wishes and continue living! I’m just escaping because I love you, baby! Forever!”

“You are-!” Polnareff snarled in rage, standing up from his position and started to walk towards their escaping enemy, dragging her along with him, letting her slide till her chest hit the ground as she held onto his leg, ripping a complaint from her when she scraped her elbow “Don’t scream, bitch!”

“Polnareff… This woman is his victim” Joseph calmly told the Frenchman as he approached the woman with a bandage between his hands “Besides… He doesn’t have any intention to come back, we must not lose time”
He kneeled down beside the young woman and started to wrap her wound with the bandage, looking serious “We already lost Avdol but we must hurry” he stated, making the other look down at the floor in shame “It’s been fifteen days since we left Japan”

“Damn it…” the Frenchman heavily sighed, clearly annoyed by the turn of events “Well… So be it”

The rest watched him walk ahead of them, none of them saying a word so they could see what his next move would be, trying to catch a glimpse of what his next decision was going to be.

“Let’s go! We should continue our trip to Egypt!” Polnareff urged them as he looked at them from above his shoulder “Listen to me! To defeat Dio, our hearts must work as one… We can’t slip from the group!” he stated, earning himself deadly looks from the others “That’s what they expect us to do… Understood?”

At the irony of his words, Jotaro and Noriko side smiled, amused by all the scene while Caesia laughed and Joseph stared at the man with a confused expression on his face.

“All let’s hit the road!”

“Give me a break…” Jotaro mumbled as he walked side by side with Noriko, who breathlessly laughed at the other’s odd behavior, with his grandparents walking behind them.

What they didn’t notice was the void look the woman from before was throwing at Joseph, who unconsciously moved a hand to scratch his arm, close to the spot where the woman’s blood had fallen when he was bandaging her wound, as the little hive opened and did a weird sound.

Chapter End Notes

Thank you so much for reading.

I really appreciate all the support, kudos and hints you have been giving me.

When I started to write this season, I didn't expect it to have this much of support and you don't imagine how happy that makes me feel.

Really, I thank all of you for taking the time to read this whole rewrite even tho you have already seen the anime, read the manga and know what happens.
I also take this as a break from the unjustified pressure I feel about updating since I have been updating non-stopping since I posted the first chapter in the whole series and I want to fix in a calmer way the chapters that are about to come.

I'm sorry if I disappointed you with the news but I really need it.

Thank you so much for understanding.

Take good care of each one of you and your families, see you soon.
The Empress

Chapter Summary

Old habits die hard.

Chapter Notes

*Joseph's theme starts to play in the background*
*falls from the sky*

I'M BACK, MY LOVES! (/▽○▽)/

hello dears, how have you been?
it's been a month or so from the last update and let me tell you that I missed you all very much (■﹏■)

I'll be honest, this chapter has me at the tip of my toes since, as I spoiled one of you, there is a major change in here that I hope you like („••„)■

also, this is a dedication to the reader that told me I could do better by placing some of my original ideas with canon so, here you go, my dude (أشخاص: ascriptinc.com)

anyways, I have already made this longer that what I wanted so... ENJOY! (つ’- ˊˇˋ)

See the end of the chapter for more notes

Back in the mansion, outside in the courtyard where no one dared to spend nor pass through, Enyaba, came bursting into the place from another dark room inside the mansion, dropping to her knees in front of a random passerby cat, who looked directly at her as she clutched her head after been hit with a dreadful realization that made her heart feel heavy.

“My son is dead…” she shakily stated, her pained raspy tone of voice echoing around her as she sank on her pain “Our close family ties let me know of the terrible fate he just suffered…”

At those words, twin holes of those that J. Geil had suffered started to appear all over Enyaba’s face, dragging blood from them as she horribly wailed for her child, making the feline hiss in fear as its hair stood defensibly, wailing and wailing as she grabbed the strands of her white hair and looked up at the sky in despair.

“Oh, my dear son… You died covered in wounds!” she lamented and dropped forward, using her
two right hands to stop her fall “This wounds allow me to experiment your wounds! You made a great job fighting for Lord DIO, J. Geil!”

As her outburst came to an end, the old woman dropped her face to ground, her whole body trembling from the overwhelm mix of feelings she was experiencing “However…” she hissed with hatred “That they had been able to end with a soul as pure as yours… It means that they resorted to dishonest tricks…”

*If her body was trembling from deep sorrow, now it was trembling from anger as her hatred for the Joestar line increased.*

When her Lord DIO told her about his plans on waking up the comatose body of his dead wife, Enyaba had been reluctant to follow said wishes.

The rest of his followers were utterly stupid, but she wasn’t.

She could tell that her Lord DIO wanted to bring Johanna Joestar back to life to restart what they seemed to have so many years ago, if the way he caressed her and the way he treated her meant something, and that worried her deeply.

The old woman feared that he would forget about his goal of conquering the whole world once Johanna Joestar woke up, but it seemed that her fears were utterly *useless* since it seemed that, since the damn woman returned back to life, his fire to conquer the world became stronger as his bloody and sadistic desire to erase the Joestar line increased.

She didn’t get why he wanted so bad to get rid of the bloodline Johanna Joestar gave birth to, but now she deeply understood his repulsion towards cold murders like them.

*“Damn it!”* she cursed as she jumped in the air after more holes and more blood appeared all over her, falling right in her feet “Fuck them! I’ll make sure they pay a terrible prize with The Empress’ card!”

At that, she started to run towards the open gate that would take her to her Lord’s quarters, lifting up her stick to slam it into the cat’s head “Move!” she screeched at it with rage “It’s time for me to take care of it with a Stand that will slowly kill them!”

With more screeching and pained sounds, she increased her speed as she ran and rage turned into madness “Kill them!” she shouted with a wicked look on her old wrinkled face “I’ll kill them all!”
What Enyaba couldn’t see or bother to notice in her sudden outburst, was the shaking figure of a noirette woman who hide behind one of the pillars through all of it.

Her hands were trembling as she fist the material of her Victorian dress, slowly walking to where the older woman had been, kneeling to the floor where the injured cat laid, softly caressing its white fur with trembling hands as tears poured down her face, letting them fall free to her bruised and injured neck, tracing the purple and red bruises, alongside with the sharp scratches and bites her chest area had suffered.

Taking deep breathes, Johanna Joestar looked up into the blue sky with her empty blue, closing her eyes as a deep pain and fear installed itself on her heart.

♡

After deciding what their next transportation would be, the Crusaders and the girl they had rescued found themselves seated inside a bus that would take them from Calcutta to Benares so they could continue their crusade and reach Egypt.

Currently, Jotaro, Noriko and Caesia wore pissed off looks on their faces as they listened to Polnareff’s lame attempts to get into the girl’s underwear while Joseph wore a worried look as he scratched his arm.

“Listen…” Polnareff started to say, seated beside the girl that decided to tag along with them “I don’t tend to give lectures, but stupid people never understand even when you repeated yourself”

At that, Noriko wanted to desperately start banging her head against the window beside her to escape her suffering, wanting to numb herself out from the awkward situation.

Wanting to see if the other were in a similar situation at her, she had to suppress her laughter when she threw a side glare to Jotaro, who used his hat to cover his annoyed look, but she could see the corner of his mouth twitching, giving away the sign he desperately wanted to shut at their Frenchman friend and get him to shut up.

Deciding to let the other boy suffering alone, she looked at the front and let out a little laugh as she heard Caesia’s angered mumbling about how much of an idiot Polnareff could be and how much she wanted to punch him so they could have a peaceful ride.

“There will always an idiot that won’t understand you no matter how much you repeat yourself” Polnareff continued to say, even when the girl didn’t replay to him “But… You know what? Eh, you haven’t told me your name…”
“Nena…”

“Nena! That’s a good name!” the silver-haired male praised the girl, pretending to be surprised “You are the daughter of a wealthy family from Benares, right?” he asked her, trying to sound interested in her “You are very beautiful and it’s obvious you are very smart, I’m very good at judging so I’ll have to lecture you…”

Feed up of Polnareff’s attempts of flirtation, Caesia loudly groaned, hiding her face behind the palm of her hands “Please… Someone just shut him up!”

Joseph, who would have laughed right then and there at his wife’s suffering for the idiocy of their French friend, felt a strange itch in his arm, making look down at it to check on it, finding a bug-bite on it.

“Hol Horse is a horrible man and a liar” Polnareff pointed out, softly scolding the young woman as he badmouthed the blonde man from before “He cheated on you! Your parents will get sad!”

At his insistence, he started to think he had gotten what he wanted but the girl continued to give him a bored look.

“You can’t end up like that” he insisted and pressed into the matter “Listen to me… It’s easy to let go because of love, but you can’t look at things with so much simplicity. You should always have a critical and rational eye”
Noriko, who had returned to look back at the window, sighed in relief as the city came closer and closer to view, glad that she would soon get out of the bus and away from the Frenchman, so she decided to give the same relief to the Joestar trio and shut Polnareff’s mouth.

“Hey… I can see it” she loudly informed so her companions could hear her, feeling a certain teal-blue gaze fall in her before said gaze moved to the window and look outside “It’s the Benares’ city…”

“Thank God…” Caesia mumbled as she let out a relieved sigh, rubbing her temples to release some of the tension and headache she felt “I would have killed him if we had to spend another hour in here”

At her words, the teenage girl softly chuckled while an almost invisible smile appeared on Jotaro’s face, both teen completely amused and agreeing with the Italian woman.

“If you allow me, Miss Joestar…” Noriko politely started to say, covering her big smile with a hand “I would gladly give you a hand”

The redhead’s words had the oldest female laughing as she arranged herself on her seat to look back at her, a huge goofy grin plastered on her face, causing some of the wrinkles close to her eyes to stand out.

“Then… I would gladly take the offer, Kakyoin”

As for Jotaro, who had witnessed the whole exchange from the corner of his eye in complete silence, felt a warm feeling on his chest as he saw the smiles on his grandmother and the younger girl’s faces, fighting the urge to smile and the twitch on his lips, he pulled even more down the brim of his hat, muttering a soft “Good grief…” as he waited for their stop.

Joseph, who had been looking around and side-hearing the exchange between his wife and Noriko, looked down at his itching hand, hissing in disgust by the shape the bug bite had turned.
“Damn it… It’s only getting worse” he mumbled, catching Caesia’s attention as she also looked at his arm to find the pulsing bug-bite.

“Are you okay?” she gently asked him, sounding both worried but also disgusted by how red and inflamed it was.

“Yeah… I think so” he breathlessly replied, looking back at her and giving her a little unsure smile, trying to reassure her but failing as he received a sharp glare that had him gulping since the look promised a painful lecture once they were alone.

Once they reached their stop, Jotaro, Noriko, Caesia and Joseph hopped out from the bus and stood in a circle as they waited for Polnareff and Nena to approach them so they could talk about their next move and plan.

Jotaro, always the silent observer, noticed that his usual annoying and loud grandfather was more silence than ever, lasting an awful time in complete calmness. To make sure he was alright and also find the source of his weirdness, the Japanese teen had kept an eye on him since they came out from the bus and notice he had turned a paler shade, and obvious change he had easily noticed since his grandfather’s tanned skin was duller than usual.

“Hey, Old Man…” he called for him, wanting a straight answer to what the hell was wrong with him “You don’t seem to be very well…”

“It seems that my bug bite got infected” Joseph confessed, raising his arm to show his grandson his current issue so he could give an explanation to his down expression and attitude.

“It is very swollen…” Noriko observed with an arched eyebrow at the weird form the bug bite seemed to have “It would be better if you go to the doctor before it gets worst…”

Polnareff, who had been staring at the inflamed skin since he had approached them, cupped his chin with a frown on his pale face “Hey… Don’t you think that it has a human face?”
“Don’t do that kind of jokes, Polnareff!” Joseph scolded the Frenchman as he shielded the bite with a hand, uncomfortable by the choose of words.

“I’m sorry…” the other apologized as he gave breathless and amused laughs before smiling “Want me to come to the hospital with you?”

“No!” Joseph denied as he started to walk ahead and away from them “And stop treating me like an old man!”

“Don’t worry about him, Polnareff” Caesia said to the silver-haired as she turned to look at him from above her shoulder, giving them a devilish grin “I’ll take care of that giant baby”

“I heard you!”

All of them (minus Jotaro) shared a laugh as the blonde woman started to approach her husband, who was waiting for her a couple of steps ahead, leaving the teenagers and Polnareff by themselves as they disappeared from their sight.

What they didn’t see was how Nena stuck her tongue out and one of the things that stuck on Joseph’s arm back in Calcutta made the same sound the thing on Joseph’s arm did before.

. 

♡

. 

“We will have to extract it”

“Excuse me?!” Joseph asked in a shout, surprised and startled by the doctors conclusion.

“Stop being a baby, Jojo” Caesia scolded her husband as she stood beside him as he was seated on the hospital’s bed “Just listen to the doctor”

After walking for a couple of minutes, the couple found what seemed to be a decent hospital and
went in towards the emergency part so they could be given a quick answer so now they were there, with an old doctor that had kindly attended them.

“But Caesia-” he whined, looking at his wife like an injured puppy.

“Listen. To. The. Doctor” the blonde Italian remarked, looking at the older man with a smile so he could continue, making Joseph do the same but with a pout on his lips “Please continue, doctor”

“It’s very infected” the doctor proceeded to explain “If we don’t extract it, it will only get worse”

“Hey, hey, hey” Joseph nervously said as he held onto his arm, alarmed as he watched the old man walk towards a near medical table “Can you just give me some remedies and bandage me up?”

“Relax… I’ll use local anesthetic so it won’t hurt” the doctor tried to calm him down, looking back at them from above his shoulder “No problem! No problem at all!”

Immediately, the grey-haired male looked up at his wife and gave her a puppy look, begging her to get him out from his current dilemma, but she shook her head, refusing to help him, making him panic even more as he looked worriedly at the doctor.

“Come on, lie down” the doctor ordered, making Joseph tremble with anxiety, being almost manhandle by his own wife as she forced him to lie down, only to be blinded by a light the older male was going to use after getting ready and Caesia got out of the room.

“I studied medicine back in the United Kingdom” the doctor commented, his voice muffled by the mouth piece “I also make appendectomies” he informed as he tested the scalpel with a finger to check on its state “Oh, no… This is a little rusted…”

His words made Joseph arch an eyebrow, feeling another burst of insecurity explode inside of him, wanting to desperately escape from the situation and save himself from whatever disease he might get but couldn’t since the anesthetic had already kicked in on his arm.

“But there is no problem” the doctor dismissed, coming closer to him after cleaning the scalpel and ready to operate “Okay… I’ll make the incision”
“I can’t take it” the British man whined as he closed his eyes and looked away “I don’t want to see how you do it!”

“No problem” the doctor dismissed again, trying to calm him down, making Joseph crack an eye open before closing it again when he saw the scalpel getting close to his skin.

He pressed his eyes shut as much as he could, listening to the sound of flesh being slashed over and over again, making him tremble a little bit in fear.

“Hey! Did you finish?!?” he panicky asked the older man with his eyes still closed once the noise stopped “Are you done?!”

A choked sound called for his attention, forcing Joseph to open his eyes to find the bloody and destroyed face of the doctor with the scalpel stabbed into his head and piercing it, ripping a shocked scream from his part, watching wide-eyed as the poor man fell backwards, dead.

“What?!?” he asked completely shocked, quickly sitting on the stretcher with his two hands placed at each side of his body, completely confused for what had happened.

“Hey, doctor!” a weird and annoying voice interrupted the silence the room was in, making the British man jump on his place for its sudden appearance “How dare you to try to extract me, idiot?!?”

He looked around, trying to find the source of the voice but found no one, freezing on his spot as he looked down at his arm when he lifted it, crying out in shock at the sight of, what he believed it was a normal bug bite, a horrible face on it, ripping a shocked shout as it sang.

“W-What the hell is this?!” he screamed in frighten, completely disturbed by having that thing into his skin and attached to his body.

“I’m Empress and my card is The Empress, grandpa Joseph” the damn thing presented itself “I’ll make you bleed!”

As it saw it spit something towards his face, Joseph grabbed another scalpel and moved it so he could stab the thing to fight it back.
“When did you stick to me?!?” he asked the enemy Stand as he drew it down but his attack was stopped by the set of teeth it used “It has teeth! It stopped it!”

He tried to move the scalpel but found it difficult as the thing didn’t let go of it “Why are you so strong?!” he demanded to know, struggling with it before the scalpel was ripped from his hands “It took the scalpel!”

Before he knew it, the Stand moved and ripped one of his prosthetic fingers on its attack, watching with wide-eyes as it fell to the ground with the ripped part of his glove.

“Oh no!” he screamed, moving his hand as he breathed in relief “Thanks to Heavens it was my artificial hand…”

“Why are you cutting yourself?” The Empress mocked him “I already attached to your muscles, grandpa Joseph” and also explained “You won’t escape me, baby”

“Do you want me to guess what you are thinking?” it asked him again with an evil smirk on its face “I’ll tell you… “Stand users can only be defeated by other Stand users, the ability of my Hermit Purple can only allow me to see in big distances, will I be able to fight? Can I use it to defeat this thing that merged with my arm?”” it questioned, laughing once it finished “It will be impossible for you!”

“Where is your user?! When did you attached to me?!” Joseph demanded to know, looking at the Stand with disgust and anger.

“Do you think that I will tell you, idiot?!” the Empress asked him, vomiting some green substance that he managed to avoid with a grunt.

“Bastard…” he hissed at it, covering it with his hand as he dashed towards the door to get to the others and his wife, mainly to her.

“Are you going to look for your friends?” it asked it with a palpable smirk on its voice “I wonder if you won’t have any trouble…”

Before he could process what the Stand was saying, the door abruptly opened, showing a pissed off and somewhat disheveled Caesia, who held into the knob of the door, with a worried nurse behind her.
“Jojo! I heard screaming!” she worrying announced to him as she locked her fierce green eyes with his wide open emerald-green ones “I wanted to come earlier, but this woman wouldn’t let me!” she quickly explained, starting to look down “What happen-?!”

Joseph already knew that her eyes had just landed on the corpse on the floor as she cut herself and the nurse started to scream in frighten at the sight.

“T-The doctor…!” the blonde nurse screamed, looking fearfully at Caesia as she separated herself from the older female.

“Hey! Don’t jump to conclusions!” Joseph begged the woman with a loud voice, trying to get closer to her as Caesia blinked and processed what she just saw “I am-!”

“I’m the guilty one!” the annoying Stand cut him short, making him stare wide-eyed at it as Caesia did the same, her eyes widening in disgust and horror at the sight of the Stand on his arm “I’m Joseph Joestar! An American! I’m currently staying at the Khulak hotel! And my wife is also a murder!”

“What?!”

“By the way, young lady…” it continued, this time directing the conversation to the trembling nurse “You don’t know how much I like the nurses like you…”

“What?!” Joseph and Caesia screamed at once, the latter more in rage than shock, louder than before.

“A murder!” the nurse cried out as she dashed out from the room, clearly with the intention to call for the cops.

“Hey! It’s not like that!” the grey-haired male screamed, trying to desperately stop her but failed since she was very far from reach “Oh no…”

“There is no time for that!” Caesia shouted as she grabbed Joseph’s free hand and forced him to dash out with her, interrupting his lamenting “We have to go! Now!”
“But-!” he tried to protest, but was interrupted as they ran towards an alley.

“Not now, Jojo!” she shouted, practically dragging him as they ran away “It’s time for us to use that technique of yours!”

Resigned that they now were criminals, he started to run with her, knowing very well that the Joestar secret technique was their only ally for now.

Joseph and Caesia breathed heavily as they almost melted their backs against one of the walls in the alley they were currently hiding in, keeping an eye to the main street where they saw some officers running around, clearly looking out for them for the murder of the doctor.

The silence was tense and they were in edge, so it was understandable they almost jumped out of their skin when the cursed Stand started to laugh.

“Now you won’t be able to go back to the hotel!” it said with a wicked grin on its disgusting and red face “Now I can kill you both without no one interrupting me!”

“Y-You are a fucking idiot!” Joseph hissed at it with hatred, lifting his arm to destroy it “I’ll turn you into pieces!”

With all his strength, he threw his arm backwards and towards a wall, ready to smash the Stand to death, but sadly found himself unable to as he felt something stopping him altogether.

“What?!?” he screeched as he looked down, finding out that the Stand now had two arms that were pressed against the wall, stopping his attack.

“Hey! This is your own arm!” the Empress reminded him with a smirk “You should take better care of it, old man!”
“It has grown arms” the British pointed out with gritted teeth before noticing something alarming “It keeps growing?!”

The enemy Stand said nothing, it just only moved to grab into the bars beside the wall, forcing Joseph to try to rip it from it but failing each time, making it laugh with its high pitched laugh.

“Hey! Let me go!” he ordered it, grabbing onto his arm to pull “Stop holding onto it!”

“In your dreams!”

“Let go…” Caesia, who had been quiet and just watching, stepped forwards to help her husband and get rid of the annoying pest with two of her Stand’s white arms completely coated with Hamon and a dark aura all over her “Let go before I make you…”

“I don’t think so, baby” the Stand mocked her, unbothered by the lighting in the light blonde’s arm “If you hit me, your useless husband will be the one who will suffer the damage”

“Woks for me” she told it with a shrug, willing her Stand’s arms to move back to pulverize the Empress so they could escape.

“Wait, Caesia!” Joseph shouted in fear, knowing from very firsthand how much her punches hurt, even when they both were Hamon users “I don’t want to die!”
“You won’t die, you big baby!” she scolded him in a hiss, stopping her arm in midway before turning to look down at their current problem “Now stay still!”

“No!”

“Joseph!”

“No!”

“Joseph Joestar!”

“No!”

Seeing the distraction as an advantage, the Stand smirked and shouted, loud enough to be heard by some officer “Officer! Here are the murders! Over here!”

The shout interrupted the arguing couple, both of them almost hissing at the annoying Stand before they looked from the corner of their eyes to the officer that had stopped right out of the alley they were in.

“It has been so long, but I don’t have another option…” Joseph told himself, taking deep breathes so he could summon his own Hamon.
While Caesia had keep up with her Hamon training from time to time as one of the oldest Hamon masters in Italy due to her being Lisa Lisa’s successor, Joseph had dropped his own training after promising himself that he won’t let his kids out grew him and lose them from old age while he stayed young.

Obviously, when he proposed the idea to his wife, he immediately knew that Caesia was against it.

Hamon had been a great part of the Italian woman’s life, being Hamon what brought disgrace to her family but also the only thing that kept her tied to her father and grandfather, family members that were ripped from her but ones that she had somehow gained back when she took her role as a Hamon user and master.

Hamon was important and a essential part on Caesia’s life, but seeing her now, older and close to the age she was supposed to be, with her light blonde hair and wrinkles on her face, he couldn’t help but be prouder of her as she willed her Stand to attack, his strength to conceal all his Hamon on his fist.

“Hey, you two!” an officer called for them, pointing a weapon to their backs and getting Joseph out of his daydream bubble “What are you doing?!”

Once he felt the familiar and old sensation of Hamon cracking on his fingertips, he immediately drove it towards The Empress’s body, anxious to get rid of the damn thing “Overdrive!”

He used all the Hamon and all the strength he had in hopes for it to work, but soon enough found himself both surprised and frustrated as the Stand had the audacity to smirk at him and still held into the bars.

“Idiot! This is your arm!” Empress reminded him, making one of the light blonde’s eyebrows to twitch in annoyance “Do you really think that you could use Hamon against your own body?!”

“Hey, you!” the officer’s voice shouted at Joseph when he shifted, pointing his weapon at him as a warning “Don’t move!”

“In that case…” he mumbled as he extended his free hand “Hermit Purple!”

Purple vines with thorns quickly manifested and shot towards the Stand, wrapping themselves around all over the Stand’s body, effectively ripping choked and pained sound from it.

“It’s suffocating me…”
“I can also use *Hermit Purple* in this way!” he told it, clearly pissed off by the situation both he and Caesia were in, watching as the Stand started to let go of the bars.

“I told you not to move!”

“*Stai zitto, idiota!*” Caesia hissed back at the officer in a whisper but it was too late since the officer started to shoot at them.

Finally free from the Stand’s grip on the bars, Caesia and Joseph ran away, avoiding each bullet that was shot to their way.

As they gave a turn in the alley, Caesia quickly removed the scarf on her neck and threw it at her husband, who quickly caught it and covered Empress with it, ignoring the shouts from the officer between the gunshots, demanding them to stop.

“Damn it!” the grey-haired male hissed as he looked down at the moving piece of cloth, frustrated with it.

“What are you doing?!” the Stand screeched as it moved below the cloth “I see nothing!”

“*Stai zitto, stronetto!*” Caesia hissed at the thing with hatred as they kept running.

“Man, what a mess…”

[STAND NAME] Hermit Purple

**Power:** D - **Speed:** C

**Range:** D - **Durability:** A
Meanwhile, Polnareff, alongside with Nena, the woman from before, The Empress’s user, walked around the main streets of Benares, both of them left completely alone since Jotaro and Noriko had gone to find a local cafeteria since Noriko happened to be hungry and Jotaro tagged along to avoid leaving her by himself.

Personally, he had left the teenagers completely by themselves so they could solve the obvious romantic tension and attraction they both seemed to have for each other, while he also got to make his moves with the beauty they had encountered and get something.

“I already told you, Nena…” he started to say again as he directed his blue gaze to her and retook their topic from before “Real men don’t resort to lip service, that’s how you recognize charlatans”
“Since we have to avoid the police, we won’t make it to the hotel…” Joseph told himself as they ran “It’s not that I don’t want Caesia with me, but if I had known about this, I would have brought Polnareff with us!”

“Instead of a ruined man like Hol Horse, why don’t you try luck with me?” Polnareff proposed as he stood in front of her, making her stop as he pointed at himself with a thumb “Am I not your type?”

But Nena only gave him a bored look, sharp purple eyes looking back at his eager blue ones.

“I won’t dig into your past” he promised her to keep alive their conversation and get some reaction from her part “It doesn’t bother me that you had had another couples in the past… What matters is the future” he clarified, trying to win her with his chivalry “If our feelings match up, of course…”

What Polnareff failed to notice but Nena didn’t was the Joestar couple that was getting closer and closer to them as they ran away from the cops so, to keep her plan up, she turned and pointed out to another place so the couple wouldn’t notice them and Polnareff wouldn’t notice them.

“Look over there!” she softly shouted, successfully dragging the Frenchman’s attention to where she wanted it for how eager he seemed to please her.

“That’s the hotel of a Japanese woman called Kumiko! Her husband is Hindu!” she informed, right in time as two males carrying a carpet blocked the path that connected the married couple with them “You can get a room for a very good price…”

“Really?” Polnareff asked with intrigue, completely fooled by the noirette’s suggestion, with a hand cupping his chin as he thought of the proposal “Is the hotel good?”
Joseph and Caesia kept running after choosing another route, running through some selling spots, stopping on their tracks when a sudden sound from under her scarf called their attention, forcing them to stand still as they notice a larger bulk where their enemy was supposed to be, scaring them further when they heard chewing sounds coming from there, watching as a completely eaten apple fell to the ground.

“What…?” Joseph stunningly asked, holding his arm as more half-eaten vegetables and fruits started to fall to the ground “What the hell are you doing?!?”

The couple stayed quiet, listening as the chewing sounds came to a stop before they heard the annoying sound The Empress made while the bulk grew even more.

“I'm eating, Joestar…” it sing-sang as it taunted “To grow bigger and stronger…”

“You stole the food from the spots!” he pointed out, angry with the Stand and how much it had ruined their reputation “Quick bastard!”

Before Caesia could comment the situation, another biting sound interrupted her, forcing them to watch as a chicken’s pierced head rolled out from under the scarf, surprising the couple as they stared wide eyed as blood also came out of the cloth and tainted the cloth.

“You are-!” the grey-haired male hissed in hatred as he pulled off the cloth to reveal the Stand, making him regret it.

His reckless action was a mistake since he was immediately punched straight into his face with an abnormal strength, making him stumble and forcing him back, almost falling to the ground with his ass if it wasn’t for his quick recovery and the blonde’s help.

Both emerald-green and green stared down at the length of Joseph’s arm, finding a new and very disgusting form of The Empress that grossed them both.

“Just look at me!” the Empress told them with a disgusting tone of voice “Like father, like son or rather, like arm, like father, papa…”

“Disgusting dwarf!” Joseph hissed at it, clearly pissed off as he saw it threw kisses to him.
“Aren’t you going to defend me, mama?” it mocked Caesia in a question, somehow turning to look back at the blonde, who scolded in complete disgust as a shiver ran down her spine.

“No child of mine could be as ugly and disgusting as you, you fucking parasite!” the Italian hissed in hate as both of them looked down at it as it spit a chicken’s bone.

“I’ll show you that I, Joseph Joestar, find myself on a level different from yours when fighting is involved!” Joseph told it, dragging its attention from his wife to him as he let his confidence and fighting spirit take over him with a sharp look.

“I told it that but, what do I do?” he asked himself, trying to formulate a quick plan on his mind and get Caesia to follow him and his lead “Damn it… For now…”

With a back-up plan, he decided that his best option was “Hermit Purple!”

Purple vines coated with Hamon shouted around the enemy Stand, wrapping them all over the Stand again, but it quickly backfired.

“Father… I appreciate you for taking care of me all this time” the Empress “thanked” him, freely moving its arms as it pointed a finger to him “But… Don’t you think that you are being a little apprehensive with your child?”

“You aren’t his child, just fucking get it” Caesia scolded with hatred, losing the few strands of patient that were left on her.
“Every chick must leave the nest someday…” it taunted while ignoring Caesia, bending down over itself to bite hard into Joseph’s arm, piercing his tanned skin and dragging blood from the wound.

“Oh no!” he cried out, throwing his head back as he bended a little backwards and Hermit Purple vanished from sight.

Without saying anything to his wife and feeling the looks glued to his backs, he ran out of the scene, ignoring Caesia’s shouts of his name as she ran behind him.

“It’s useless” he told himself as its fangs were still glued to his skin “I want to use Hermit Purple to find its user, but I don’t have a camera, and I totally doubt Caesia has one” he cursed his luck, trying to find a quick plan to get out of the situation.

“W-What do I do?! ” he also asked him with sweat coating his forehead “At this rate, not only my arm, but my whole body will merge with it!”

As it saw it move from the corner of his eyes, Joseph found it doing an attack position as it gave a loud warrior cry, making him stop on his steps from the surprise.

“I think that I’m strong enough to kill you” it stated, leaning forwards and towards his throat, immediately moving it backwards “See? My hand can already reach your neck” it pointed out with a smirk on its face “If I bust your carotid artery, it will be your end…”

Before the Empress, who had already positioned itself to an attacking mode, could cause him some damage, Joseph immediately covered his face with his artificial hand for what was coming, receiving some hard hits on it but stopped its attack when they heard her voice.
“No if I do it first!”

Both the British man and the Stand turned to the source of the voice, finding Caesia Anthonia Joestar-Zeppeli standing tall and proud in front of them with one of her Stand’s arms completely coated with her Hamon as the lighting in it cracked and moved all over it.

“If you hurt me, your husband will face the consequences!” the Stand reminded her with a smirk on its face “And that will make my job way too easier!”

The blonde didn’t answer, she just pulled down her sunglasses with an elegant move of her hand, locking eyes with the Stand’s ones, showing it all the anger she was feeling in her green orbs.

“So be it”

“Oh no!”

With that (and ignoring his panicked shout), Caesia dashed towards them and all Joseph could feel was the familiar burning sensation of Hamon right where the Stand stood out.

Before he could defend himself to stop the pain, he was immediately hit with another hit, over and over again till he was threw backwards when a particular hard hit got him, sending him crashing down and straight into a selling spot, throwing all over him some type of dust that was stored in a vessel he broke with his fall, vessel the Stand used to start hitting him, clearly not affected by the Hamon.

“Bastard…” he hissed at it, rolling over in the dust and away from the rest as he tried to hold it still.

“What was that?!”

“Look! That man has a disgusting tumor on his arm!”

“Could that be the reason of why that woman hit him?”
“Don’t you have better things to do?!” Caesia barked at the males, covering Joseph’s body from their view as she threw them a furious look that promised pain if they didn’t avert their eyes, making them shiver in fear and take some steps aback, giving her husband the perfect opportunity to escape, holding the Stand’s body.

“Damn it! Where is its user?!” the grey-haired male asked himself with Caesia hot on his heels as they ran away from the crowd, looking around to find the person so they could get rid of the Empress on his arm.

Meanwhile, Nena, who caught sight of the married couple again by the corner of her eye, stood in front of Polnareff when they stood in one of the alleys she had managed to get them into as he ate a snack, ready to go for her next move.

“Mister Polnareff…” she called for his attention, running to him when she heard his noise of acknowledge “I’m a woman that can’t live without a reliable man at her side!” she cried out, placing a hand on his chest as she looked up at him “I like you because you are very confident and attentive!”

“Hey… Why so sudden…?” the Frenchman asked in disbelief, blinking a few times as she placed her head on his chest.
“Really?!” Polnareff squealed in happiness to himself, grinning from ear to ear “I can’t resist to her charm! Lucky!”

♡

As for her, Nena looked from the corner of her eye as the couple ran away from them once again, securing her safety and her victory while the Frenchman tried to hug her.

♡

Joseph and Caesia ran some more around the streets, cursing their bad luck for having not found neither Polnareff nor Jotaro nor Noriko through all their escape.

When the sound of a police car’s sirens echoed around them, they let out frustrated grunts and hide behind a broken wall to ensure their safety, running out from their spot when it was safe enough to move and get into another set of alleys, climbing the stairs that proudly stood in their way.

When they reached the top, both of them breathed heavily for having run for so long, getting more tired as each step they took but their steps never faltering, only able to breath in relief when they made it to an empty street where their chances of fighting raised without major interference.

The only sound or ghost of conversation between them was their heavy breathing and, when it was caught by certain Stand, both of them almost groaned in annoyance.

“Hey, Joseph Joestar!” the Empress called, making them both look down at it, finding a wicked smirk on its face “Idiot! You don’t do nothing more but getting away from Jotaro and the rest!”

“Did you really think that we would run around till we tired ourselves out?!” Joseph asked it with a fierce look, making it stop its mockery when he moved his arm so the Stand was facing whatever it came to their direction “We have been running away to finish you off!”

At the Stand’s confusion, none of them tried to clarified it, letting their actions speak for them, especially the British’s one, that was basically jumping towards a certain barrel.
“My objective was submerging you in this!” he stated, slamming his arm down into the dark liquid the barrel contained and sinking it.

The tension could be felt all over Joseph and Caesia as they anxiously looked down, waiting for a reaction as some bubbles started to form around his arm but jumped back when a hand shot from the black substance and slammed something into Joseph’s neck.

“Senile old man!” the Empress shouted, perfectly fine from their attack although covered in the dark substance.

“Why don’t you just fucking die already?!” Caesia snarled back as she and Joseph tried to pull out the thing that it had slammed into his neck.

“A nail?!” the grey-haired male shouted in disbelief when he touched the object with his fingers and Caesia tried to pull it out.

“I picked it up a while ago, I took it when you were rolling in the ground!” it casually informed them with a satisfied tone of voice “Now I can cut your carotid artery! Do you really thought that you could drown me in this thing?!” it sarcastically asked them before putting more pressure on its hold.

Due to the attack, Joseph was slammed back to a wall and Caesia was pushed aside for the rough movement, making her let go of the nail and leaving Joseph alone to defend himself.

“I have a physical form but I’m not a living organism… Did you already forgot?” it taunted, lifting at liquid-covered arm to continued attacking, showing off its triumphant smirk “Only a Stand user can defeat another one!” it screeched with superiority “Didn’t you say that you would show me the difference between our fighting abilities?! What difference where you talking about? You are nothing more but a helpless old man!”
“M-My artificial fingers!” Joseph shouted to himself as he saw them start to crack for the strength he was using to defend himself “They were left in bad shape after that attack and they almost don’t have any strength!”

“Come on… Just a little push” the Empress said, its grip never faltered “Your lame life is about to end! There is nothing left that you can do to defeat me…”

But it stopped when a sudden crack was heard, making the Stand open its eyes in shock while Joseph and Caesia smirked as the liquid from before started to harden itself around its body.

“There is nothing…” it tried to say, but found itself unable to as all the liquid over it hardened enough to hold it in place.

“What?! What was what you said?!” Joseph loudly asked in a taunt, stepping away from the wall to stand by his wife side, smirking down at the thing “I’m sorry… My hearing has worsen up with age. Can you repeat it again?”

“I think that my hearing has also worsen up, Jojo…” Caesia supported as she shot a wicked grin to the Stand “Please, say it as loud as you can so we both can hear you”

“Tar!” the Stand shouted in disbelief as it seemed to have gotten the upper hand of the situation “You dipped me in tar! You didn’t want to drown me but immobilize me!”

“Ding ding ding! It seems that we have a winner, Jojo!” the blonde mocked with pretended happiness, shooting a grin to her husband, making him laugh.

“How did you two know that you would found tar in here?!”

The Joestar male just laughed as the characteristic sound of Hermit Purple surrounded the Stand as
the couple grinned “We own it all to my Stand’s powers, Hermit Purple!”

“Hey! Take a look at this!”

“What is that?!”

“They are the ashes that that foreigner spread when he was punched by that foreigner woman…”

“They formed a map of the city!”

“You formed a spiritual picture!” the Empress realized, showing the signs of fear and desperation all over its face “That’s how you found the tar! You used the ashes!”

“I think that you finally notice the difference that exists between us” Joseph calmly told the Stand as he used his free hand to point at him and Caesia “My enemies always lose when they start to brag” he stated, looking down at the gapping Stand “That’s how I do my thing...”

“The worst mistake you can make is underestimate the very man” Caesia stated as she pretended to be bored, looking down at her hand as she pretended to check her nails “And also manage to piss off his wife” she declared, faking pity as she let her sunglasses fall to let the Stand see how angry she was “And you, you little shit, have crossed the line…”

“It seems that we only get better with age” he grinned from ear to ear, wrapping his arm on his wife’s waist, pulling her close to him “And also…”
At his will, Hermit Purple slammed and curled itself around the Empress’s body, holding it tight as a larger vine wrapped over their heads and curled into a bar from above and Caesia’s Stand white arms came to view.

“Only a Stan can defeat another Stand!” they quoted, looking up at the restrained Stand.

“And now you will say: “S-Stop! Anything but that!”” the grey-haired male stated, locking eyes with the Empress.

“S-Stop! Anything but that!” it repeated, letting out a panicked scream once the realization came in, making the couple grin and wink to it.

“It’s a shame since it will hurt me too…” he faked pity, pretending to be sad for his decisions “But children can’t depend on their parents forever” letting go of Caesia’s waist, he jumped, using a finger to get more height and push Caesia’s Stand gave him “You must leave the nest once you are older!”

Once up, Joseph pulled himself down as fast as he could, tightening his hold into the other Stand till he completely ripped it, turning it into pieces as it screeched in pain, exploding into a fleshy mess of meat all over the ground as he recovered his footing.

“Let’s see… Where is its user?” he wondered as the blonde approached him, letting him drop an arm on her shoulders.

“I think that doesn’t matter anymore” she commented, looking down at the mess on the ground “Wherever she/he is, she/he must be dead”

“It’s a shame…” he whined as they started to walk out of the place so they could get the rest “I would have wanted to kick their ass first”

At that, Caesia snored and hide a laugh, wrapping one of her arms around his back, bumping her hip with his “Some things never change” she commented, guiding them so they could use the alleys to avoid the police.
Joseph stayed quiet for a while but nuzzled her hair, leaving a soft kiss to it as a smile appeared on his face “No, I guess not…”

Some minutes ago, right after Joseph turned into shreds the enemy Stand, Polnareff and Nena stood in the alley from before, with the former all excited while the latter stood frozen in her spot, unnoticed by the male.

“So, Nena” he sing-sang, looking at her with a flirty smile “Let’s seal our vow of love with a kiss”

Not waiting for her response, he closed his eyes and leaned down so he could be close to her face and join their lips, but quickly opened them when he heard something unusual and felt her tremble under his hold, quickly jumping backwards as vomit shot out of her mouth.

“What?! What?! What the hell?!” he shouted in panic, scared and shocked by the action “What’s wrong with you, Nena?!”

But an unconscious scream was ripped from his throat when Nena bended her body forward before she threw it backwards, allowing the shape of a fat woman to come out of the skinny body while blood flew messily around as she screamed, dropping dead to the ground in a pool of her own blood, the whole action going in the very eyes of a shocked and traumatized Frenchman.

“So she was The Empress’s user…” a voice mumbled close to him, making Polnareff look at the source of the voice to find Joseph and Caesia standing close to each other, with the blonde leaning her weight into Joseph who leaned his weight into the closest wall.

Scared, he jumped back to stand close to him, mentally scarred by what he just saw and witnessed.

“That horrible woman was nothing more but a tumor stuck to a human face” the grey-haired male commented, looking down at the still bleeding corpse “She managed to camouflage herself inside an attractive woman…”
“Disgusting Stands tend to have disgusting user” Caesia quoted Noriko with a grossed expression on her pale face as she looked away, turning her disgust into mischief at the shocked and disgusted look the Frenchman held on his face “You would have noticed if you weren’t so busy in getting into her underwear”

“You got distracted” Joseph scolded the younger, backing up his wife as they winked at each other “She had you in her pocket, Polnareff…”

Said man only made more choked sounds as his whole body shook in disgust while the couple laughed at his suffering, dragging him out of the alley before they were caught and get reunited with the teenagers.

[STAND NAME] The Empress

Power: C - Speed: E

Range: A - Durability: A

Precision: D - Growth Potential: D

[STAND MASTER] Nena

After snatching Noriko and Jotaro from a local cafeteria and informing them about Joseph and Caesia’s encounter with The Empress, the five Crusaders stood in front of a lake in the middle of the night, listening to the sound of the nature as a soft breeze moved their clothes and hairs.

“And I thought that we would finally sleep on a bed” Noriko lamented with a sigh as she and Jotaro stood close to each other, both of them looking at the beauty the lake held.
“If only the Old Man hadn’t gotten himself in trouble with the police and got my grandmother involved…” Jotaro bitterly commented with his arms crossed over his chest, clearly angered at the oldest male in the group.

“I already took care of everything” Joseph said as he approached the teenagers, a little angry for how hard his grandson was being with him, placing a hand on the back of the vehicle they had just brought “We will leave in this car”

With a nod from the redhead teen, he turned to the second oldest male in their group “Polnareff, you drive”

But the said male didn’t answer, not even when the keys got into his hair, he just kept hugging his legs close to his chest, clearly still bothered and traumatized by the recent turn of events.

“Hey… Haven’t you recovered yet?” Joseph asked him, placing his hands on his hips with an incredulous “The Stand attacked me and Caesia”

“I would have preferred that…” the Frenchman mumbled with a low voice, clearly still not over it.

“Get over it, you idiot” Caesia scolded as she went to the copilot side of the car, clearly not wanting to deal with Polnareff’s down mood, being quickly followed by Joseph.

After getting Polnareff out of his depressive state (that might have been thanks to Jotaro’s threats), the five of them were now seated on their respective places inside the car.

While Polnareff took the driver seat, Joseph and Caesia took the copilot seat, with the blonde seated on her husband’s lap as they both fell into deep slumber, while Noriko and Jotaro took the backseats.

To Noriko’s credit (who decided to stay awake for a little bit when she saw the elderly couple fast asleep), she handled very well the situation she got herself into when she felt the sudden weight of Jotaro’s head on her right shoulder, deciding not to move to let him rest against her, giving Polnareff the finger when she caught sight of his smug smirk through the rearview mirror, daring him to speak with just a look of her fierce violet gaze.
What they didn’t notice when they left the lake and hit the road was another car, whose engineer rocked to life as it started to follow them…

Chapter End Notes

now, how was it? (ง’´‘ง)

I'm sorry that Noriko and Jotaro didn't get as much spotlight as you would expect them to get since this retale is theirs, but it doesn’t hurt to add a chapter about our beloved Joseph and Caesia (▅▅•ᴗ•▅▅)

also, we got a glimpse of what Caesia's Stand looks like and the key of what they will need in the future (▅▅•ᴗ•▅▅)

I promise that you will see more slow burn for those two, especially from Joot's part (▅•ᴗ•▅)

also, you might have noticed that you will be getting 42 chapters for this fic, which makes this the largest and most ambitious fic I have ever written… I gotta be honest with you, I'm scared (-﹏-) 

if you wonder why I did a little reduction of chapter (I chose to jump like 6 chapters in total) is due to me sorting out some things and taking off those that I considered them more like fillers instead of proper chapters and most of the ones I kept will make a huge difference and impact to what canon followed up to (or that's what I hope to do, I still don't know how that will turn out to be)

there is a lot that I want to change in some chapters so I beg you to bear with me and have patience since I will try to write the second season as fast as I can to give you the chapters you deserve (▅•ᴗ•▅)

as usual, I want to thank all of you for having so much patience with me and loving this work that started like a vague idea and turned into so much more thanks to your love and support ♡

all of you have a special spot in my heart and I can't even express how happy you all make me feel with your kind and encouraging words ( ˘///˘ )♡

remember to stay home, follow the instructions and take a good care of yourselves. we are going through hard times but we will go through them.

I love you, have a nice weekend (づ‘-‘づ)=˘˘♥

(p.d: if you wonder how I imagine Noriko just look for Hajnarus design on either Instagram or Twitter)

Please drop by the archive and comment to let the author know if you enjoyed their work!